



Luke Rhinehart

# The Dice Man



to A.

J.

M.

without any of whom,  
no Book.



## Preface

'The style is the man,' once said Richard Nixon and devoted his life to boring his readers.

What to do if there is no single man? No single style? Should the style vary as the man *writing* the autobiography varies, or as the past man he writes about varied? Literary critics would insist that the style of a chapter must correspond to the man whose life is being dramatized: a quite rational injunction, one that ought therefore to be repeatedly disobeyed. The comic life portrayed as high tragedy, everyday events being described by a madman, a man in love described by a scientist. So. Let us have no more quibbles about style. If style and subject matter happen to congeal in any of these chapters it is a lucky accident, not, we may hope, soon to be repeated.

A cunning chaos: that is what my autobiography shall be. I shall make my order chronological, an innovation dared these days by few. But my style shall be random, with the wisdom of the Dice. I shall sulk and soar, extol and sneer. I shall shift from first person to third person: I shall use first-person omniscient, a mode of narrative generally reserved for Another. When distortions and digressions occur to me in my life's history I shall embrace them, for a well-told lie is a gift of the gods. But the realities of the Dice Man's life are more entertaining than my most inspired fictions: reality will dominate for its entertainment value.

I tell my life's story for that humble reason which has inspired every user of the form: to prove to the world I am a great man. I shall fail, of course, like the others. 'To be great is to be misunderstood,' Elvis Presley once said, and no one can refute him. I tell of a man's instinctive attempt to fulfil himself in a new way and I will be judged insane. So be it. Were it otherwise, I would know I had failed.

We are not ourselves; actually there is nothing we can call a 'self' any more; we are manifold, we have as many selves as there are groups to which we belong . . . The neurotic has overtly a disease from which everybody is suffering . . .

—J. H. VAN DEN BERG

My aim is to bring about a psychic state in which my patient begins to experiment with his own nature — a state of fluidity, change and growth, in which there is no longer anything eternally fixed and hopelessly petrified.

—CARL JUNG

The torch of chaos and doubt — this is what the sage steers by.

—CHUANG-TZU

I am Zarathustra the godless: I still cook every chance in my pot.

—NIETZSCHE

Anybody can be anybody.

—THE DICE MAI

## Chapter One

I am a large man, with big butcher's hands, great oak thighs, rock-jawed head, and massive, thick-lens glasses. I'm six foot four and weigh close to two hundred and thirty pounds; I look like Clark Kent, except that when I take off my business suit I am barely faster than my wife, only slightly more powerful than men half my size, and leap buildings not at all, no matter how many leaps I'm given.

As an athlete I am exceptionally mediocre in all major sports and in several minor ones. I play daring and disastrous poker and cautious and competent stock market. I married a pretty former cheerleader and rock-and-roll singer and have two lovely, non-neurotic and abnormal children. I am deeply religious, have written the lovely first-rate pornographic novel, *Naked Before the World*, and am not now nor have I ever been Jewish.

I realize that it's your job as a reader to try to create a credible consistent pattern out of all this, but I'm afraid I must add that I am normally atheistic, have given away at random thousands of dollars, have been a sporadic revolutionary against the governments of the United States, New York City, the Bronx and Scarsdale, and am still a card-carrying member of the Republican Party. I am the creator, as most of you know, of those nefarious Dice Centers for experiments in human behavior which have been described by the *Journal of Abnormal Psychology* as 'outrageous,' 'unethical,' and 'informative'; by *The New York Times* as 'incredibly misguided and corrupt'; by *Time* magazine as 'sewers'; and by the *Evergreen Review* as 'brilliant and fun.' I have been a devoted husband, multiple adulterer and experimental homosexual; an able, highly praised analyst, and the only one ever dismissed from both the Psychiatrists Association of New York (PANY) and from the American Medical Association (for 'ill-considered activities' and 'probable incompetence'). I am admired and praised by thousands of dicepeople throughout the nation but have twice been a patient in a mental institution, once been in jail, and am currently a fugitive, which I hope to remain. Die willing, at least until I have completed this 430 page autobiography.

My primary profession has been psychiatry. My passion,





yourself. If you desire to have carnal knowledge of a helpless teeny-bopper, you are supposed to accept your lust, and not lay a finger on even her big toe. If you hate your father, fine — but don't slug the bastard with a bat. Understand yourself, accept yourself, but do not be yourself.

It is a conservative doctrine, guaranteed to help the patient avoid violent, passionate and unusual acts and to permit him a prolonged, respectable life of moderate misery. In fact, it is a doctrine aimed at making everyone live like a psychotherapist. The thought nauseated me.

These trivial insights actually began to form in the weeks following my first unexplained plunge into depression, a depression ostensibly produced by a long writing block on my 'book,' but actually part of a general constipation of the soul that had been a long time building up. I remember sitting at my big oak desk after breakfast each morning before my first appointment reviewing my past accomplishments and future hopes with a feeling of seorn. I would take off my glasses and, reacting to both my thoughts and the surrealistic haze which became my visual world without my glasses, I would intone dramatically, 'Blind! Blind! Blind!' and bang my boxing-glove-sized fist down on the desk with a dramatic crash.

I had been a brilliant student throughout my educational career, piling up academic honors like my son Larry collects bubble-gum baseball cards. While still in medical school I published my first article on therapy, a well-received trifle called 'The Physiology of Neurotic Tension.' As I sat at my desk, all articles I had ever published seemed absolutely as good as other men's articles: blah. My successes with patients seemed identical to those of my colleagues: insignificant. The most I had come to hope for was to free a patient from anxiety and conflict: to alter him from a life of tormented stagnation to one of complacent stagnation. If my patients had untapped creativity or inventiveness or drive, my methods of analysis had failed to dig them out. Psychoanalysis seemed an expensive, slow-working, unreliable tranquilizer. If LSD were really to do what Alpert and Leary claimed for it, all psychiatrists would be out of a job overnight. The thought pleased me.

In the midst of my cynicism I would occasionally daydream of the future. My hopes? To excel in all that I had been ~~fail~~ in the past: to write widely acclaimed articles and books, to raise my children so they might avoid the mistakes I had made, to meet some technicolor woman with whom I would ~~be~~



I was stunned and converted – as only the utterly bored can be. Seeing drive, greed and intellectual aspiration as meaningless and sick in my colleagues, I was able to make the unusual generalization to myself; I too had the same symptoms of grasping after illusions. The secret, I seemed to learn, was in not caring, in accepting limitations, conflicts and ambiguities of life with joy and satisfaction, in effortless drifting with the flow of impulse. So life was meaningless? Who cares. So my ambitions are trivial? Pursue them anyway. Life seems boring? Yawn.

I followed impulse. I drifted. I didn't care.

Unfortunately, life seemed to get more boring. Admittedly I was cheerfully, even gaily bored, where before I had been depressedly bored, but life remained essentially uninteresting. My mood of happy boredom was theoretically preferable to my desire to rape and kill, but personally speaking, not much. It was along about this stage of my somewhat sordid road to truth that I discovered the Dice Man.



five-pound variety, was by this time announcing in slightly louder tones than her older brother:

'Cock-a-doodle-do! Time to get up.'

Generally, we get up. Occasionally, when I don't have a nine o'clock patient, we encourage Larry to fix himself and his sister some breakfast. This he is happy to do, but the curiosity aroused by the sound of shattering glassware or the *lack* of sound of anything from the kitchen makes our extra minutes in bed unrewarding: it is difficult to enjoy sensual bliss while certain that the kitchen is on fire. This particular morning Lil arose right away, modestly keeping her front parts turned away from the children, slipped on a flimsy nightgown that may have left them in ignorance, but left nothing to my imagination, and slouched sleepily off to prepared breakfast.

Lil, I should note here, is a tall, essentially slender woman with sharp and pointed elbows, ears, nose, teeth and (metaphorically) tongue, but soft and rounded breasts, buttocks and thighs. All agree she is a beautiful woman, with natural wavy blonde hair and statuesque dignity. However, her lovely face has a peculiarly pixyish expression which I'm tempted to describe as mousy except that then you'll picture her with beady red eyes, and they're actually beady blue. Also, mice are rarely five feet ten and willowy, and rarely attack men, as Lil does. Nevertheless, her pretty face, in some perceivers, calls up the image of a mouse, a beautiful mouse to be sure, but a mouse. When during our courtship I remarked upon this phenomenon it cost me four weeks of total sexual abstinence. Suffice it to say, my friends, that this mouse analogy is strictly between you and me.

Although young Evie had scrambled talkatively away to follow her mother toward the kitchen, Larry still lay sprawled next to me on the large king-sized bed. It was his philosophical position that our bed was large enough for the whole family and he deeply resented Lil's obviously hypocritical argument that Mommy and Daddy were so big that they needed the entire area. His recent strategy was to plop on the bed until every last adult was out of it; only then would he triumphantly leave.

'Time to get up, Luke,' he announced with the quiet dignity of a doctor announcing that he's afraid the leg will have to come off.

'It's not eight o'clock yet,' I said.



In the small kitchen Lil was standing at the stove aggressively mashing eggs in a frying pan; the two children were sitting in whining obedience on the far side of the table. Larry had been playing with the window shade behind him (we have a lovely view from our kitchen window of a kitchen window with a lovely view of ours), and Evie had been guilty of talking without a break in either time or irrelevance since getting up. Lil, since we don't believe in corporal punishment, had admonished them verbally. However, Lil's shrieks are such that were children (or adults) ever given a free choice, I'm sure they would prefer that rather than receive 'verbal admonitions' they be whipped with straps containing metal studs.

Obviously Lil does not enjoy the early morning hours, but we found that having a maid at this hour was 'impractical.' When, earlier in our marriage, the first full-time live-in maid we hired turned out to be a beautiful, sex-oozing wench of a mulatto whose eyes would have stiffened a Eunuch, Lillian intelligently decided that a daytime, part-time maid would give us more privacy.

As she brought the plates of scrambled eggs and bacon to the table she glanced up at me and asked:

'What time will you be back from Queensborough today?'

'Four-thirty or so. Why?' I said as I lowered my body delicately into a small kitchen chair across from the kids.

'Arlene wants another private chat this afternoon.'

'Larry took my spoon!'

'Give Evie her spoon, Larry,' I said.

Lil gave Evie back her spoon.

'I imagine she wants to talk more of the "I have to have a baby" dream,' she said.

'Mmm.'

'I wish you'd talk to Jake,' Lil said as she sat down beside me.

'What can I tell him?' I said. '"Say Jake, your wife desperately wants a baby: anything I can do to help?"'

'Are there dinosaurs in Harlem?' Evie asked.

'Yes,' Lil said. 'You could say precisely that. It's his conjugal responsibility; Arlene is almost thirty-three years old and has wanted a baby for - Evie, use your spoon.'

'Jake's going to Philadelphia today,' I said.

'I know; that's one reason Arlene's coming up. But the poker is still on for tonight, isn't it?'





After we'd all finished breakfast she led the children into their room to get dressed while I went to wash and shave. Holding the lathered brush stiffly in my raised right hand like an Indian saying 'Howl', I stared glumly into the mirror. I always hated to shave a two-day growth of beard; with the dark shadows around my mouth I looked – potentially at least – like Don Giovanni, Faust, Mephistopheles, Charlton Heston, or Jesus. After shaving I knew I would look like a successful, boyishly handsome public relations man. Because I was a bourgeois psychiatrist and had to wear glasses to see myself in the mirror I had resisted the impulse to grow a beard. I let my sideburns grow, though, and it made me look a little less like a successful public relations man and a little more like an unsuccessful, out-of-work actor.

After I'd begun shaving and was concentrating particularly well on three small hairs at the tip of my chin Lil came, still wearing her modest, obscene nightgown, and leaned against the doorway.

'I'd divorce you if it wouldn't mean I'd be stuck with the kids,' she said, in a tone half-ironic and half-serious.

'Nnn.'

'If you had them, they'd all turn into clownish Buddha-blobs.'

'Unnnn.'

'What I don't understand is that you're a psychiatrist, a supposedly good one, and you have no more insight into me or into yourself than the elevator man.'

'Ah, honey –'

'You don't! You think loving me up, apologizing before and after every argument, buying me paints, leotards, guitars, records and new book clubs must make me happy. It's driving me crazy.'

'What can I do?'

'I don't *know*. You're the analyst. You should know. I'm bored. I'm Emma Bovary in everything except that I have no romantic hopes.'

'That makes me a clod doctor, you know.'

'I know. I'm glad you noticed. It's no fun attacking unless you catch my allusions. Usually you know about as much about literature as the elevator man.'

'Say, just what is it between you and this elevator man?'

'I've given up my yoga exercises –'

'How come?'



garde art with Ma Kettle [our maid], reading *Time*, listening to Schubert's *Unfinished Symphony*: racy, thought-provoking experiences all.'

'You . . . [she scratched her nose against my chest] . . . should mention that I could do coloring with Larry when he gets home from school.'

'And that, and that. You've absolutely no end of home entertainments. Don't forget to call in the elevator man for a quick one when Evie is having her rest time.'

My right arm around her, I walked us into our bedroom. While I finished dressing, she watched quietly, standing next to the big bed with arms folded and elbows out. She saw me to the door and after we had exchanged a farewell kiss of less than great passion she said quietly with a bemused, almost interested expression on her face:

'I don't even have my yoga anymore.'



'They'll like it - I may convert a few *analysts*.'

'Are you going to be able to make lunch today?' I asked.

'When are you leaving for Philadelphia?'

'Damn right. Want to show Mann my review. Plane leaves at two. I'll miss your poker party tonight.'

'Er ... Dr. Ecstein.'

'You read any more of my book?' Jake went on and gave me one of his piercing ~~staring~~ glances, which, had I been a patient, would have ~~led me~~ to repress for a decade all that was on my mind at that ~~moment~~.

'No. No, I haven't. I ~~must~~ will have a psychological block: professional jealousy and all that.'

'Er ... Dr. Ecstein?'

'Hmmm. Yeh. In Philly I'm gonna see that anal optometrist I've been telling you about. Think we're about at a breakthrough. Cured of his ~~visionism~~, but still has visual black-outs. It's only been three months though. I'll bust him. Bust him right back to twenty-twenty.' He grinned.

'Dr. Ecstein, sir,' said Miss Reingold, now standing.

'Seeya Luke. Send in Mr. Klopfer, Miss R.'

As Jake, still carrying a handful of forms, exited briskly into his inner office, I asked Miss Reingold to check with Queensborough State Hospital about my afternoon appointments.

'Yes, Dr. Rhinehart,' she said.

'And what did you wish to communicate to Dr. Ecstein?'

'Oh, Doctor,' she smiled doubtfully. 'Dr. Ecstein asked for the case notes on Miss Piffe and Mr. Klopfer and I gave him by mistake the record ~~check~~ of our last year's budget.'

'Don't worry, Miss Reingold,' I replied firmly. 'This may mean another breakthrough.'

It was 9.07 when I finally settled into my chair behind the outstretched form of Peginald Jenkins on my couch. Normally nothing upsets a patient more than a late analyst. But Jenkins was a masochist: I could count on him assuming that he deserved it.

'I'm sorry about being here,' he said, 'but your secretary insisted I come in and lie down.'

'That's quite all right, Mr. Jenkins. I'm sorry I'm late. Let's both relax and you can go right ahead.'

Now the curious reader will want to know ~~what kind of an~~ analyst I was. It so happens that I practised ~~predominantly~~ <sup>is passive</sup> therapy. For those not familiar with it, the



dollars-an-hour echoing away through it all behind the couch.

And it works. It works precisely as well as every other tested form of psychotherapy. It works sometimes and fails at others, and its successes and failures are identical with other analysts' successes and failures. Of course at times the dialogue resembles a comedy routine. My patient the second hour that morning was a hulking heir to a small fortune who had the build of a professional wrestler and the mentality of a professional wrestler.

Frank Osterflood was the most depressing case I'd had in five years of practice. In the first two months of analysis he had seemed a rather nice empty socialite, worried half-heartedly about his inability to concentrate on anything. He tended to drift from job to job averaging two or three a year. He talked a great deal about his jobs and about a mousy father and two disgusting brothers with families, but all with such cocktail-party patter that I knew we must be a long way from what was really bothering him. If *anything* was bothering him. The only clue I had to indicate that he was anything but a vacuous muscle was his occasional spitting hissing remarks – usually of a general nature – about women. When I asked one morning about his relations with women he hesitated and then said he found them boring. When I asked him how he found fulfillment for his sexual needs, he answered neutrally, 'Prostitutes.'

Two or three times in later sessions he described in detail how he liked to humiliate the call girls he hired, but he would never make any effort to analyze his behavior; he seemed to feel in his casual man-of-the-world way that humiliating women was good, normal, all-American behaviour. He found it more interesting to analyze why he left his last job; the office he worked in 'smelled funny.'

About halfway through the session that August day he interrupted his seemingly pleasant recollections of having single-handedly destroyed an East Side bar by sitting up on the couch and looking intensely but, in my professional opinion, dumbly, at the floor. Even his face seemed bulging with muscles. He sat there in the same position for several minutes, grunting quietly to himself with a sound like a noisy refrigerator. Finally he said:

'I get so tied up inside I just have to . . . to do something or I'll explode.' he said.

'I understand.'





in the doorway with a sledgehammer or something. [Pause] I found sodomy, *per se* [he smiled awkwardly], didn't end my tenseness.'

'You were unable to release your tension by relations with prostitutes when the women seemed to experience no pain or humiliation.'

'So I knew I had to find someone who would scream.'  
[Pause]

[Long pause]

'You sought other alternatives to relieve your tensions.'

'Yeah. Fact is I began raping and killing young girls.'

[Pause]

[Long pause]

[Longer pause]

'In an effort to relieve these tense feelings you began raping and killing young girls.'

'Yeah. You're not allowed to tell, are you? I mean you told me professional ethics forbid your telling anything I say, right?'

'Yes.'

[Pause]

'I find the raping and killing of girls helps relieve the tension quite a bit and makes me feel better again.'

'I see.'

'My problem is that I'm beginning to get a little nervous about getting caught. I sort of hoped maybe analysis might help me find a little more normal way to reduce my tensions.'

'You'd like to find a different way to reduce tensions other than raping and killing girls.'

'Yeah. Either that or help me to stop worrying about getting caught. ...'

The alert reader may now be feeling that this stuff is slightly too sensational for a typical day at the office, but Mr. Osterflood really exists. Or rather existed – more of that later on. The fact is that I was writing a book entitled *The Sado-Masochistic Personality in Transition*, a work which was to describe cases in which the sadistic personality developed into a masochistic one and vice versa. For this reason my colleagues always sent me patients with a markedly strong sadistic or masochistic bent. Osterflood was admittedly the most professionally active sadist I'd treated. — the wards — and hospitals have many like him.



patients as well as the next fellow and then published clear, brilliant accounts demonstrating that the key to his success was accident, that frequently it was his failure to follow his own theoretical structure which led to a 'breakthrough' and the patient's improvement. When I ended my early-morning dialogue with Miss Reingold joking that Jake's reading the 1967 budget record sheets might lead to a breakthrough I was partly serious. Jake had shown again and again the significance of chance in therapeutic development, perhaps best dramatized in his famous 'pencil-sharpening cure.'

A female patient he'd had under treatment for fifteen months with so little success in changing her neurotic aplomb that even Jake was bored, achieved total and complete transformation when Jake, absentmindedly confusing her with his secretary, ordered her to sharpen his pencils. The patient, a wealthy housewife, went into the outer office to obey and suddenly, when about to insert a pencil into the sharpener, began to shriek, tear her hair and defecate. Three weeks later, 'Mrs. P.' (Jake's choice of pseudonyms is only one of his unerring talents) was cured.

I, then, was coming to feel that my elaborate writing efforts were only idle, pretentious playing with words for publication.

I thus spent the hour before lunch: (a) reading the financial section of *The New York Times*; (b) writing a page-and-a-half case report of Mr. Osterflood in the form of a financial and budget report ('bearish outlook for prostitutes'; 'bull market in Harlem playground girls'), and (c) drawing a picture on my book manuscript of an elaborate Victorian house being bombed by motorcycle planes piloted by Hell's Angels.



dishes and 'soft' music and trying to avoid watching Dr. Mann eating that I never remember whether the food was good or not. At any rate I rarely got sick on it.

'Only ten percent of our subjects believe that masturbation is "punished by God eternally",' Dr. Felloni was saying as Jake and I sat down opposite each other at the tiny table. She was apparently talking about a research project she and I were jointly directing, and she smiled formally and equally to her left at Jake and to her right at me, and continued: 'Thirty-three and a third percent believe that masturbation is "punished by God finitely"; forty percent that it is physically unhealthy; two and one-half percent believe that there is danger of pregnancy, seventy-five per —'

'Danger of pregnancy?' Jake broke in as he turned from accepting a menu.

'We use the same multiple choices,' she explained smiling, 'for masturbation, kissing, petting, premarital and postmarital heterosexual intercourse, homosexual petting, and homosexual sodomy. So far, subjects have indicated that there is danger of pregnancy only with masturbation, petting to orgasm, and heterosexual intercourse.'

I smiled to Jake, but he was squinting at Dr. Pelloni.

'Well,' Jake asked her, 'what's the question you're reeling off these percentages for?'

'We ask, "For what reasons, if any, do you believe that sexually exciting yourself through fantasy, reading, looking at pictures or manual excitation is bad?"'

'Do you give them a choice of reasons for why masturbation is good?' Dr. Mann asked, wiping his lower lip with a piece of roll.

'Certainly,' Dr. Felloni replied. 'A subject can answer that he approves of masturbation for any of six options: (1) It is enjoyable; (2) it releases tension; (3) it is a natural way of expressing love; (4) it is something one should experience to be complete; (5) it procreates the race; (6) it is the social thing to do.'

Jake and I now both began laughing. When we quieted she assured Jake that only the first two choices had been chosen for masturbation, except for one person who had indicated that masturbation was valuable as a way of expressing love. She had determined in a recent interview, however, that the subject had checked that item in a cynical frame of mind.

'I don't know why you ever got involved in this thing,' Jake



'So why do you waste your time? Renata could do the whole thing herself without your help.'

'It's an entertaining time-filler. I often daydream of publishing embellished results to parody such experiments. You know: "Ninety-five percent of American youth believe that masturbation is a better way of expressing friendship and love than intercourse."'

'Your experiment is a parody without embellishment,' Dr. Mann said.

There was a silence, if you can exclude the cacophony of voices, dishes and music of the surrounding hubbub.

'Our experiment,' Dr. Felloni finally said with a gallop of nods, 'will offer new insight into the relations between sexual behavior, sexual tolerance and personality stability.'

'I read your letter to the Esso Foundation,' Dr. Mann said.

'I know a teen-age girl that could run intellectual rings around most of us here,' Jake said, changing the subject without blinking an eye. 'She knew everything, brains coming out of her ears. I was within weeks of a major breakthrough. But she died.'

'She died?' I asked.

'Fell from the Williamsburg Bridge into the East River. I must confess I see her as one of my two or three possible failures.'

'Look, Tim,' I said, turning back to Dr. Mann. 'I agree our experiment borders on nonsense, but in an absurd world, one can only go with the flow.'

'I'm not interested in your metaphysical speculations.'

'Or my scientific ones. Maybe I'd better stick to talking about the stock market.'

'Oh come off it now, you too,' Jake said. 'Ever since Luke wrote his paper on "Taoism, Zen and Analysis", Tim has been acting as if he'd been converted to astrology.'

'At least with astrology,' said Dr. Mann, looking only at me, 'one still tries to predict something important. With Zen one drifts into Nirvana without thought or effort.'

'One doesn't drift into Nirvana,' I said helpfully. 'The drifting is Nirvana.'

'A convenient theory,' Dr. Mann said.

'All good theories are.'

'Gold stocks and General Motors have risen an average of two points a week so far this month,' Dr. Felloni said, smiling.





## Chapter Five

After lunch I paid my ransom at the local parking lot and drove off through the rain for the hospital. I drove a Rambler American. My colleagues drive Jaguars, Mercedes, Cadillacs, Corvettes, Porsches, Thunderbirds and (occasional slummers) Mustangs: I drove a Rambler. At that time it was my most original contribution to New York City Psychoanalysis.

I went east across Manhattan, up over the Queensborough Bridge and down onto the island in the East River where the State Hospital is located. The ancient buildings appeared bleak and macabre. Some looked abandoned. Three new buildings, built of cheerful yellow brick and pleasant, shiny bars, make the hospital appear, together with the older horror houses, like a Hollywood movie set in which two movies, 'My Mother Went Insane' and 'Prison Riot', are being filmed simultaneously.

I went directly to the Admissions Building, one of the old, low, blackened buildings which, it was reliably reported, was held together solely by the thirty-seven layers of pale green paint on all the interior walls and ceilings. A small office was made available to me there every Monday and Wednesday afternoon for my therapy sessions with select patients. The patients were select in two senses: one, I selected them, and two, they were actually receiving therapy. I normally handled two patients, meeting each for about an hour twice a week.

A month before this, however, one of my two patients had attacked a hospital attendant with an eight-foot-long bench and, in being subdued, had received three broken ribs, thirty-two stitches and a hernia. Since this was slightly less than he had inflicted upon the five attendants doing the subduing, no charges of hospital brutality seemed justified, and after his wounds healed, he was to be sent to a maximum-security hospital.

To replace him, Dr. Mann had recommended to me a seventeen-year-old boy admitted for incipient divinity: he showed a tendency to act as if he were Jesus Christ. Whether Dr. Mann assumed all Christs to be masochistic or that the boy would be good for my spiritual health was unclear.

My other QSH patient was Arturo Toscanini Jones, a Negro who lived every moment as if he were a black panther isolated



'You're not black, Rhinehart,' he interrupted sharply. 'If you were, we'd both know it and only one of us would be here.'

'Still, black or white, I'd like to help you.'

'Black they wouldn't let you help me; white, you can't.'

'Suit yourself.'

'That'll be the day.'

When I lapsed into silence, he resumed his. The last fifteen minutes were spent with us both listening to the regular rhythmic shrieks from a man someplace in the Cosmold Building.

After Mr. Jones left I stared out the gray window at the rain until a pretty little student nurse brought me the folder on Eric Cannon and said she'd bring the family to my office. After she left, I mused for a few seconds on what is called in the medical profession the 'p' phenomenon: the tendency of starched nurses' uniforms to make it seem as if all nurses were bountifully blessed in the bosom and thus shaped like the letter 'p'. It meant that doctors surveying the field could never be sure that a nurse they were flirting with was proportioned like two grapefruit on a stick or two peas on an ironing board. Some claimed it was the very essence of the mystery and allure of the medical profession.

Eric Cannon's folder gave a rather detailed description of a latter-day sheep in wolf's clothing. Since the age of five the boy had shown himself to be both remarkably precocious and a little simpleminded. Although the son of a Lutheran minister, he argued with his teachers, was truant from school, disobedient to teachers and parents, and a runaway from home on six separate occasions since the age of nine, the last episode occurring only six months before, when he disappeared for eight weeks before turning up in Cuba. At the age of twelve he began a career of priest baiting, which culminated in the boy's refusal to enter a church again. He also refused to go to school. He was caught possessing marijuana. He was stopped in what appeared to be the act of trying to immolate himself in front of the Central Brooklyn Selective Services Induction Centre.

Pastor Cannon, his father, seemed to be a good man - in the traditional sense of the word: a conservative, restrained defender of the way things are. But his son had kept rebelling, had refused to be treated by a private psychiatrist; refused to work, refused to live at home except when it suited him. His



is no summer camp Eric is entering. This is a state mental hospital and -'

'It's a fine place, Dr. Rhinehart,' said Pastor Cannon. 'We in New York State have every right to be proud.'

'Hmmm, yes,' I said, and turned to Eric. 'What do you think of it all?'

'There are groovy patterns in the soot on the windows.'

'My son believes that the whole world is insane.'

Eric was still looking pleasantly out the window. 'A plausible theory these days, one must admit,' I said to him, 'but it doesn't get you out of this hospital.'

'No, it gets me in,' he replied. We stared at each other for the first time.

'Do you want me to try to help you?' I asked.

'How can you help anyone?'

'Somebody's paying me well for trying.'

The boy's smile didn't seem to be sardonic, only friendly.

'They pay my father for spreading the Truth.'

'It may be ugly here you know,' I said.

'I think I'll feel right at home here.'

'Not many people here will want to create a better world,' his father said.

'Everyone wants to create a better world,' Eric replied, with a hint of sharpness in his voice.

I eased myself off the desk and walked around behind it to pick up Eric's record. Peering over my glasses as if I could see without them I said to the father: 'I'd like to talk with you about Eric before you leave. Would you prefer that we talk privately or would you like to have Eric here?'

'No difference to me,' he said. 'He knows what I think. He'll probably act up a bit, but I'm used to it. Let him stay.'

'Eric, do you want to remain or would you like to go to the ward now?'

'Full fathom five my father lies,' he said looking out the window. His mother winced, but his father simply shook his head slowly and adjusted his glasses. Since I was interested in getting the son's lived reaction to his parents, I let him stay.

'Tell me about your son, Pastor Cannon,' I said, seating myself in the wooden desk chair and leaning forward with my sincere professional look. Pastor Cannon cocked his head judiciously, crossed one leg over the other and cleared his throat.

'My son is a mystery,' he said. 'It's incredible to me that



'It's the divine right of kings,' Eric replied, smiling.

His father turned back to me and shrugged. 'There you are,' he said. 'And let me give you another example. Eric, when he was thirteen years old, mind you, stands up in the middle of my church during a crowded midmorning Communion and says aloud above the kneeling figures: "That it should come to this," and walks out.'

We all remained as we were without speaking, as if I were the concentrating photographer and they about to have their family portrait taken.

'You don't like modern Christianity?' I finally said to Eric.

He ran his fingers through his long black hair, looked up briefly at the ceiling and screamed.

His father and mother came out of their chairs like rats off an electric grid and both stood trembling, watching their son, hands at his side, a slight smile on his face, screaming.

A white-suited Negro attendant entered the office and then another. They looked at me for instructions. I waited for Eric's second lungful of scream to end to see if he would begin another. He didn't. When he had finished, he stood quietly for a moment and then said to no one in particular: 'Time to go.'

'Take him to the admissions ward, to Dr. Vener for his physical. Give this prescription to Dr. Vener.' I scribbled out a note for a mild sedative and watched the two attendants look warily at the boy.

'Will he come quietly?' the smaller of the two asked.

Eric stood still a moment longer and then did a rapid two-step followed by an irregular jig toward the door. He sang: 'We're OFF to see the Wizard, the Wonderful Wizard of Oz. We're OFF...'

Exit dancing. Attendants follow, last seen each reaching to grasp one of his arms. Pastor Cannon had a comforting arm around his wife's shoulder. I had rung for a student nurse.

'I'm very sorry, Dr. Rhinehart,' Pastor Cannon said. 'I was afraid something like this would happen but I felt that you ought to see for yourself how he acts.'

'You're absolutely right,' I said.

'There's one other thing,' said Pastor Cannon. 'My wife and I were wondering whether it might be possible if ... I understand it is sometimes possible for a patient to have a single room.'

I came around my desk and walked up quite close to Pastor





## Chapter Six

When I got home, Lillian and Arlene Ecstein were collapsed side by side on the couch in their slacks and both were laughing as if they'd just finished splitting a bottle of gin. Arlene, by the way, always seems permanently eclipsed by the brilliant pinwheeling light of her husband. A little short from my six-foot-four point of view, she usually looked prim and prudish with thick horn-rimmed glasses like Jake's and undistinguished black hair tied back in a bun. Although there were unconfirmed rumours that on her otherwise slender body she owned two marvelously full breasts, the baggy sweaters, men's shirts, loose blouses and over sized smocks she always wore resulted in no one's noticing her breasts until they'd known her for several months – by which time they'd forgotten all about her.

In her own sweet, simpleminded way I think she may once have given me a housewifely come-on, but being married, a dignified professional man, a loyal friend and having already forgotten all about her, I had resisted. (As I recall she spent one whole evening asking me to take pieces of lint off her smock: I spent the evening taking pieces of lint off her smock.) On the other hand, vaguely, late at night, after a hard day at the mental hospital, or when Lil and the children all had the 'flu or diarrhea or measles, I would feel regret at being married, a dignified professional man and a loyal friend. Twice I had daydreamed of somehow engulfing one entire Arlene breast in my mouth. It was clear that were fate ever to give me a reasonable opportunity – e.g. she were to climb naked into bed with me – I would yield; we would have one fine quick fire of first fornication and then settle into some dull routine of copulation on the q.t. But as long as the initiative were left to me I would never do anything about it. The two-thirds married professional man friend would always dominate the bored animal. And, as you, my friend, know, the combination would be miserable.

Although Lil's laugh was loud, even raucous, Arlene's was like a steady muffled machine-gun; she slumped lower on the couch as she laughed, while Lil stiffened her back and chortled at the ceiling.

'Well, what have you two been doing lately?' I asked, sliding



Why is it that I can lead my life of quiet desperation with complete poise, dignity and grace, while most women I know insist on leading lives of quiet desperation which are *noisy*. I was giving the question serious thought when I noticed Lil and Arlene crawling toward me on their knees, their hands clasped in supplication.

'Save us, O Master of the Stools, we're bored.'

'Give us the word!'

It was good to be back in the quiet of home and fireside after a trying day with the mentally disturbed.

'O Master, help us, our lives are yours.'

The effect of two crawling, begging, drunken women wiggling their way towards me was that I got an erection, not professionally or maritally the most helpful response, but sincere. Somehow I felt that more was expected of a sage.

'Rise, my children,' I said gently and I myself now stood up before them.

'O Master, speak!' Arlene said, on her knees.

'You wish to be saved? To be reborn?'

'Oh, yes!'

'You wish a new life?'

'Yes, yes!'

'Have you tried the new All with Borax?'

They collapsed forward in groans and giggles, but straightened quickly with a 'We have, we have, but still no satori' (from Lil), and 'even Mr. Clean' (from Arlene).

'You must cease caring,' I said. 'You must surrender everything. EVERYTHING.'

'Oh, Master, here, in front of your wife!' and they both giggled and fluttered like sparrows in heat.

'EVERYthing,' I boomed irritably. 'Give up *all* hope, *all* illusion, *all* desire.'

'We've tried.'

'We've tried and still we desire.'

'We still desire not to desire and hope to be without hope and have the illusion we can be without illusions.'

'Give up, I say. Give up *everything*, including the desire to be saved. Become as weeds that grow and die unnoticed in the fields. Surrender to the wind.'

Lillian suddenly stood up and walked to the liquor cabinet.

'I've heard it all before,' she said, 'and the wind turns out to be a lot of hot air.'

'I thought you were drunk.'



## Chapter Seven

The poker that evening was a disaster. Lillian and Arlene were exaggeratedly gay at first (their bottle of gin nearly empty) and, after a series of reckless raises, exaggeratedly broke thereafter. Lil then proceeded to raise even more recklessly (with my money), while Arlene subsided into a sensually blissful indifference. Dr. Mann's luck was deadening. In his totally bored, seemingly uninterested way, he proceeded to raise dramatically, win, bluff people out, win, or fold early and miss out on only small pots. He was an intelligent player, but when the cards went his way his blandness made him seem superhuman. That this blubbery god was crumbling potato chips all over the table was a further source of personal gloom. Lil seemed happy that it was Dr. Mann winning big and not I, but Dr. Felloni, by the vigor with which she nodded her head after losing a pot to him, also seemed vastly irritated.

At about eleven Arlene asked to be dealt out, and, announcing drowsily that losing at poker made her feel sexy and sleepy, left for her apartment downstairs. Lil drank and battled on, won two huge pots at a seven-card-stud game with dice that she liked to play, became gay again, teased me affectionately, apologized for being irritable, teased Dr. Mann for winning so much, then ran from the table to vomit in the bathtub. She returned after a few minutes uninterested in playing poker. Announcing that losing made her feel a frigid insomniac, she retired to bed.

We three doctors played on for another half hour or so, discussing Dr. Ecstein's latest book, which I criticized brilliantly, and gradually losing interest in poker. Near midnight Dr. Felloni said it was time for her to leave, but instead of getting a ride crosstown with her, Dr. Mann said he'd stay a little longer and take a taxi home. After she'd left, we played four final hands of stud poker and with joy I won three of them.

When we'd finished, he lifted himself out of the straight-backed chair and deposited himself in the overstuffed one near the long bookcase. I heard the toilet flush down the hall and wondered if Lil had been sick again. Dr. Mann drew out his pipe, stuffed and lighted it with all the speed of a slow-motion



'I used to feel that way.'

'Yes you did. Then you discovered Zen.'

'Yes I did.'

'And now you find writing a bore.'

'Yes.'

'And thinking?'

'And thinking too,' I said.

'Maybe there's something wrong with Zen,' he said.

'Maybe there's something wrong with thinking.'

'It's been fashionable among thinkers lately to say so, but saying "I strongly think that thinking is nonsense," that seems rather absurd to me.'

'It is absurd; so is psychoanalysis.'

He looked over at me; the crinkles around his left eye twitched.

'Psychoanalysis has led to more new knowledge of the human soul than all the previous two million years of thinking put together. Zen has been around a long time and I haven't noticed any great body of knowledge flowing from it.' Without apparent irritability he let out another vigorous mushroom cloud toward the ceiling. I was fingering one of the dice, nervously pressing my fingers into the little dots; I still looked at him, he at Freud.

'Tim, I'm not going to argue the merits and demerits of Zen again with you. I've told you that whatever I've gained from Zen is not something I've been able to articulate.'

'What you've gained from Zen is intellectual anemia.'

'Maybe I've gained sense. You *know* that eighty percent of the stuff in the psychoanalytic journals is crap. Useless crap. Including mine.' I paused. 'Including . . . yours.'

He hesitated, and then bubbled up a chuckle.

'You know the first principle of medicine: you can't cure the patient without a sample of his crap,' he said.

'Who needs to be cured?'

He turned his eyes lazily into mine and said:

'You do.'

'You analyzed me. What's the matter?' I shot back stare for stare.

'Nothing the matter that a little reminder of what life is all about won't cure.'

'Oh, piss,' I said.

'You don't like to push yourself, and along comes Zen and tells you to "go with the flow",'





getting and spending, the same drugged, desperate, repetitious faces appearing in the office for analysis, the same effective, meaningless lobs. The same old new philosophies. And the thing I'd really pinned my ego to, psychoanalysis, doesn't seem to be a bit relevant to the problem.'

'It's totally relevant.'

'Because analysis, were it really on the right track, should be able to change me, to change anything and anybody, to eliminate all undesired neurotic symptoms and to do it much more quickly than the two years necessary to produce most measurable changes in people.'

'You're dreaming, Luke. It can't be done. In both theory and practice it's impossible to rid an individual of all his undesired habits, tensions, compulsions, inhibitions, what-have-you.'

'Then maybe the theory and practice are wrong.'

'Undoubtedly.'

'We can perfect plants, alter machines, train animals, why not men?'

'For God's sake!' Dr. Mann tapped his pipe vigorously against a bronze ashtray and glared up at me irritably. 'You're dreaming. There are no Utopias. There can be no perfect man. Each of our lives is a finite series of errors which tend to become rigid and repetitious and necessary. Every man's personal proverb about himself is: "Whatever is, is right, in the best of all possible people." The whole tendency is ... the whole tendency of the human personality is to solidify into the corpse. You don't change corpses. Corpses aren't bubbling with enthusiasm. You spruce them up a bit and make them fit to be looked at.'

'I absolutely agree: psychoanalysis rarely breaks this solidifying flow of personality, it has nothing to offer the man who is bored.'

Dr. Mann harumphed or snorted or something and I moved away from the window to look up at Freud. Freud stared down seriously; he didn't look pleased.

'There must be some other ... other secret [blasphemy!] some other ... magic potion which would permit certain men to radically alter their lives,' I went on.

'Try astrology, the *I Ching*, LSD.'

'Freud gave me a taste for finding some philosophical equivalent of LSD, but the effect of Freud's own potion seems to be wearing off.'



not relaxed. Half the time you seem like a giggly schoolboy and the other half like a pompous ass.'

'I'm a therapist and it's clear I, as a human, am a disaster. Physician heal thyself.'

'You've lost faith in the most important profession in the world because of an idealized expectation which even Zen says is unrealistic. You've gotten bored with the day-to-day miracles of making people slightly better. I don't see where letting them get slightly worse is much to be proud of.'

'I'm not proud of -'

'Yes you are. You think you've got absolute truth or at least that you alone are seeking it. You're a classic case of Horney's: the man who comforts himself not with what he achieves but with what he dreams of achieving.'

'I am.' I stated it flatly: it happened to be true. 'But you, Tim, are a classic case of the normal human being, and I'm not impressed.'

He stared at me not puffing, his face flushed, and then abruptly, like a big balloon bouncing, arose from his chair with a grunt.

'I'm sorry you feel that way,' he said and chugged toward the door.

'There must be a method to change men *more* radically than we've discovered -'

'Let me know when you find it,' he said.

He stopped at the door and we looked at each other, two alien worlds. His face showed bitter contempt.

'I will,' I said.

'When you find it, just give me a ring. Oxford 4-0300.'

We stood facing each other.

'Goodnight,' I said.

'Goodnight,' he said, turning. 'Give my best to Lil in the morning. And Luke,' turning back to me, 'try *finishing* Jake's book. It's always better to criticize a book after you've read it.'

'I didn't -'

'Goodnight.'

And he opened the door, waddled out, hesitated at the elevator, then walked on to the stairwell and disappeared.



downstairs and rape Arlene. 'If it's a one, I'll rape Arlene,' kept blinking on and off in my mind like a huge neon light and my terror increased. But when I thought if it's not a one I'll go to bed, the terror was boiled away by a pleasant excitement and my mouth swelled into a gargantuan grin: a one means rape, the other numbers mean bed, the die is cast. Who am I to question the die?

I picked up the queen of spades and saw staring up at me a cyclopean eye: a one.

I was shocked into immobility for perhaps five seconds, but finally made an abrupt, soldierly about-face and marched to our apartment door, opened it and took one pace outside, wheeled, and marched with mechanical precision and joyous excitement back into the apartment, down the hall to our bedroom, opened the door a crack and announced loudly: 'I'm going for a walk, Lil.' Turning, I marched out of the apartment a second time.

As I walked woodenly down the two flights of stairs I noticed rust spots on the railing and an abandoned advertising circular crumpled into a corner. 'Think Big,' it urged. On the Ecstein floor I wheeled like a puppet, marched to the door of their apartment and rang. My next clear thought swept with dignified panic through my mind: 'Does Arlene really take the pill?' A smile colored my consciousness at the thought of Jack the Ripper, on his way to rape and strangle another woman, and worrying whether she was protected or not.

After twenty seconds I rang again.

A second smile (my face remained wooden) flowed through at the thought of someone else's already having discovered the die and thus now busily banging away at Arlene on the floor just on the other side of the door.

The door unlatched and opened a crack.

'Jake?' a voice said sleepily.

'It's me, Arlene,' I said.

'What do you want?' The door stayed open only a crack.

'I've come downstairs to rape you,' I said.

'Oh,' she said, 'just a minute.'

She unlatched and opened the door. She was wearing an unattractive cotton bathrobe, possibly even Jake's, her black hair was straggling down her forehead, cold cream whitened her face, and she was squinting at me without her glasses like a blind beggar woman in a melodrama of the life of Christ.



breasts, squeezing her buttocks, caressing her labials, mounting her in the usual fashion and, after a longer time bucking and plunging than customary (I felt through the whole act like a puppet trained to demonstrate normal sexual intercourse to a group of slow teenagers), finished. She writhed and humped a few too many seconds longer and sighed. After a while she looked up at me.

'Why did you do it, Luke?'

'I had to, Arlene, I was driven to it.'

'Jake won't like it.'

'Ah . . . Jake?'

'I tell him everything. It gives him valuable material, he says.'

'But . . . this . . . have you been . . . raped before?'

'No. Not since getting married. Jake's the only one and he never rapes me.'

'Are you sure you have to tell him?'

'Oh yes. He'd want to know.'

'But won't he be tremendously upset?'

'Jake? No. He'll find it interesting. He finds everything interesting. If we'd committed sodomy that would be even more interesting.'

'Arlene, stop being bitter.'

'I'm not bitter. Jake's a scientist.'

'Well, maybe you're right but -'

'Of course, there was that once . . .'

'What once?'

'That a colleague of his at Bellevue caressed one of my breasts with his elbow at a party and Jake split open his skull with a bottle of . . . bottle of . . . was it Cognac?'

'Split his skull?'

'Brandy. And another time when a man kissed me under mistletoe, Jake, you remember, you were there, told the guy -'

'I'm remembering - so look, Arlene, don't be silly, don't tell Jake about tonight.'

She considered this.

'But if I don't tell him, it will imply I've done something wrong.'

'No. I've done something wrong, Arlene. And I don't want to lose Jake's friendship and trust just because I've raped you.'

'I understand.'

'He'd be hurt.'





## Chapter Nine

Back upstairs in my living room I stared dreamily at the exposed one on the die. I scratched my balls and shook my head in dazed awe. Rape had been possible for years, *decades* even, but was realized only when I stopped looking at whether it were possible, or prudent, or even desirable, but without premeditation did it, feeling myself a puppet to a force outside me, a creature of the gods – the die – rather than a responsible agent. The cause was chance or fate, not me. The probability of that die being a one was only one in six. The chance of the die's being there under the card, maybe one in a million. My rape was obviously dictated by fate. Not guilty.

Of course I could simply have broken my verbal promise of following the dictates of the die. True? True. But a promise! A solemn promise to obey the die! My word of honor! Can we expect a professional man, a member of PANY, to break his word because the die, with the odds heavily against it, determined rape? No, obviously not. I am clearly not guilty. I felt like spitting neatly into some conveniently located spittoon in front of my jury.

But on the whole it seemed a pretty weak defense, and I began vaguely hunting for a new one when I became ablaze at the thought: I am right: I must always obey the dice. Lead where they will, I must follow. All power to the die!

Excited and proud, I stood for a moment on my own personal Rubicon. And then I stepped across. I established in my mind at that moment and for all time, the never-to-be-questioned principle that what the die dictates, I will perform.

The next moment was anticlimactic. I picked up the die and announced: 'If it's a one, three or five, I'll go to bed; if it's a two I'll go downstairs and ask Jake if I can try to rape Arlene again; if it's a four or a six I'll stay up and think about this some more.' I shook the die violently in the cup of my two hands and flipped it out onto the poker table; it rolled to a stop: five. Astonished and a bit let down, I went to bed. It was a lesson I was to learn many times in subsequent cards; the dice can show almost as poor judgment as a human.



Lil, her messed blonde hair, reddish eyes and uncertain frown making her look unusually like a mouse approaching cheese in a trap, looked at me suspiciously.

'I did it?' she asked, her mind stumbling over the events of last night.

'Sure. Don't you remember? You said something like "Now, Freud can look into the bowels of the house," and staggered off to the john.'

'I did not,' she said. 'I strode with great dignity.'

'You're right. You strode with great dignity in a variety of directions.'

'But essentially I moved east.'

'True.'

'East and johnward.'

We laughed and I asked her to bring another cup of coffee and a doughnut to my study. Evie and Larry momentarily escaped from the clutches of the maid and swooped through the living room like two desperadoes shooting up a town and disappeared back toward the kitchen. I retreated to my home within my home: my old oaken desk in the study.

For a while I sat there throwing the two green dice across its scarred face and wondering what the events of the night before meant for me. My legs and loins felt heavy, my mind light. Last night I had done something I had vaguely felt like doing for two or three years. Having done it I was changed, not greatly, but changed. My life for a few weeks would be a little more complex, a little more exciting. Searching for a free hour to play with Arlene would while away time that in the recent past had been spent not being able to work on my book, not being able to concentrate on my cases and daydreaming about stock market coups. The time might not be *better* spent, but I would be better entertained. Thanks to the die.

What else might the dice dictate? Well, that I stop writing silly psychoanalytic articles; that I sell all my stock, or buy all I could afford; that I make love to Arlene in our double bed while my wife slept on the other side; that I take a trip to San Francisco, Hawaii, Peking; that I bluff every time when playing poker; that I give up my home, my friends, my profession. After giving up my psychiatric practice I might become a college professor . . . a stockbroker . . . a real estate salesman . . . Zen master . . . used-car salesman . . . travel agent . . . elevator man. My choice of profession seemed suddenly infinite. That



## Chapter Eleven

Everything didn't turn out to be too much at first.

That afternoon the dice scorned all sorts of exciting options and steered me instead to the corner drugstore to choose reading matter at random. Admittedly, browsing through the four magazines chosen – *Agonizing Confessions*; *Your Pro-Football Handbook*; *Fuck-it* and *Health and You* – was more interesting than my usual psychoanalytic fare, but I vaguely regretted not having been sent by the dice on a more important or absurd mission.

That evening and the next day I seemed to avoid the dice. The result was that two nights after my great D-Day I lay in bed brooding about what to do with Arlene. I wanted, no doubt about it, to press her to my bosom once again, but the dangers, complications and comedy seemed almost too much to pay. I tossed and turned in indecision, anxiety and lust until Lil ordered me to take a sedative or sleep in the bathtub.

I rolled out of bed and retreated to my study. I was halfway through a complicated imaginary conversation with Jake in which I was explaining with great clarity what I was doing under his bed and pointing out the legal complications involved in homicide, when I realized with a rush of relief that I'd simply let the dice decide. Indecisive? Uncertain? Worried? Let the rolling ivory tumble your burdens away. \$2.50 per pair.

I took out a pen and wrote out the numbers one to six. The first option to occur to my essentially conservative nature was to chuck the whole thing: I'd ignore my brief affair and treat Arlene as if nothing had happened. After all, the sporadic screwing of another man's wife might provide complications. When the woman is the wife of your Best Friend, nearest Neighbor, and closest Business Associate, the intrigue and betrayal are so complete that the end hardly seemed worth the effort. Arlene's end wasn't so different from Lil's that it justified painful hours of scheming as to how one might enter it in dice-dictated ways and painful hours of brooding about whether one should brood about having entered it. Nor were the convolutions of her soul likely to offer any more originality than those of her body.

Arlene and Jake had married seventeen years before they were both juniors in high school. Jake had been a ~~senior~~

...and after seducing Arlene one summer, he found himself sexually inexperienced in the fall when they were separated by his being away at Tapper's Boarding School for Brilliant Boys. Masturbation drove him to a fury of frustration since no daydream or self-career remotely approached Arlene's round breasts cupped in his hands or filling his mouth. At Christmas he announced to his parents that he must either return to the public high school, commit suicide or marry Arlene. His parents brooded briefly between the last two of these options and then reluctantly permitted marriage.

Arlene was quite happy to leave school and miss her algebra and chemistry finals; they were married over the Easter holiday and she began working to help support Jake through his schools. Arlene's education had thus come from life, and since her life had been spent clerking at Gimbel's, girl Fridaying at Hache and Company, typing at Woolworth's and controlling a switchboard at the Fashion Institute of Technology, her education was a limited one. In the seven years since she'd stopped working, she had devoted herself to philanthropic causes of which no one had ever heard (The Penny Parade for Puppies, Dough for Diabetes, Help Afghanistanian Shepherders!), and reading lurid fiction and advanced psychoanalytic journals. It's not clear to what degree she understood any of her activities.

The day of his marriage was apparently the last time Jake had bothered to give a thought to the pursuit of women. He seemed to have acquired Arlene in the same spirit with which in later life he acquired a lifetime supply of aspirin, and, a little after that, a lifetime supply of laxatives. Moreover, just as the aspirin and laxative were guaranteed not to produce any annoying side effects, so too he saw to it that periodic use of Arlene would be free of such effects also. There was an ill-intended rumor that he had Arlene take the pill and use an inter-uterine device, a diaphragm and a douche, while he used a contraceptive, always used her anus anyway and then always practiced *coitus interruptus*. Whatever his methods, they had worked. They were childless, Jake was satisfied and Arlene was bored and longed to have a baby.

So my first option was clear: no more affair. Feeling rebellious I wrote as number two option, 'I'll do whatever Arlene says we ought to do' (rather courageous in those days). Number three I would attempt to re-seduce Arlene as soon as possible. Too vague. I'd try to re-seduce her, hummm, obviously







Saturday evening. (The Ecsteins were having a cocktail party.)

Number four, I - I seemed to have exhausted the three obvious courses of action - no, wait, number four, I would say to her whenever I could get her alone that although I loved her beyond words, I felt that we should keep our love Platonic for the sake of the children. Number five, I would play it by ear and let my impulses dictate my behaviour (another chicken's squawk). Number six, I would go to her apartment Tuesday afternoon (the next time I knew her to be alone) and more realistically rape her (i.e. no effort at softness or seduction).

I looked at the options, smiled happily and flipped a die: four: Platonic love. Platonic love? How did that get in there? I was momentarily appalled. I decided that it was understood by number four that I might be dissuaded from Platonism by Arlene.

That Saturday evening Arlene greeted me at the door wearing a lovely blue cocktail dress I'd never seen before (neither had Jake) with a glass of Scotch and with a wide-eyed stare representing awe, fright or blindness from being without her glasses. After handing me the Scotch she was updating him (dressing), Arlene fled to the other side of the room. I drifted over to a small group of psychobabble led by Jake and listened to a consecutive series of monologues on methods of avoiding income taxes.

Depressed, I drifted after Arlene. She joined the cocktail rums on my lips. She was popping from the kitchen for her guests, smiling brightly and blankly, and then turning away in someone's misdeedence on the presumed pressure of giving someone a drink I'd never seen her so much. Then I finally followed her into the kitchen one time the was carrying on a picture of the Empire State Building, or rather as the tower beneath it with all the banking holidays covered in orange.

She turned and looked at me with the same a look of awe, fear or blindness and asked in a high-pitched, loud, nervous voice:



'Absolutely not.'

'If you keep it off the hook too long they'll disconnect the phone.'

Hesitantly she replaced the receiver and sat at one end of the couch (next to the telephone); I seated myself at the other end.

After looking at me blankly for a few minutes (I was preparing my declaration of Platonic love), she suddenly began crying into her hands.

'I can't stop you,' she moaned.

'I'm not trying to do anything!'

'I can't stop you, I know I can't. I'm weak.'

'But I won't touch you.'

'You're too strong, too forceful...'

'I won't touch you.'

She looked up.

'You won't?'

'Arlene, I love you...'

'I knew it! Oh and I'm so weak.'

'I love you in a way beyond words.'

'You *evil* man.'

'But I have decided [I had become tight-lipped with annoyance at her] that our love must always be Platonic.'

She looked at me with narrowed, resentful eyes: I suppose that it was her equivalent of Jake's penetrating squint, but it made her look as if she were trying to read subtitles on an old Italian movie.

'Platonic?' she asked.

'Yes, it must always be Platonic.'

'Platonic.' She meditated.

'Yes,' I said, 'I want to love you with a love that is beyond words and beyond the mere touch of bodies. With a love of the spirit.'

'But what'll we do?'

'We'll see each other as we have in the past, but now knowing we were meant to be lovers but that fate seventeen years ago made a mistake and gave you to Jake.'

'But what'll we do?' She held the phone to her ear.

'And for the sake of the children we must remain faithful to our spouses and never again give in to our passion.'

'I know, but what will we do?'

'Nothing.'

'Nothing?'



She rose now and took off her glasses and put them next to the telephone. She came to me and put a trembling hand on the side of my arm.

'You may stay,' she said.

'No, I must leave.'

'I'll never let you leave your children.'

'I would be too strong. Nothing could stop me.'

She hesitated, her eyes searching my face.

'You're so strange.'

'Arlene, if only ...'

'Stay.'

'Stay?'

'Please.'

'What for?'

She pulled my head down to hers and gave me her lips and mouth in a kiss.

'I won't be able to control myself,' I said.

'You must try,' she said dreamily. 'I have sworn never to go to bed with you again.'

'You what?'

'I have sworn on my husband's honor never to get into bed with you again.'

'I'll have to rape you.'

She looked up at me sadly.

'Yes, I suppose so.'



grind assigned to see five movies, go to two dances and play bridge a minimum of five hours a day all week. Of course, most meaningful assignments involved a breach of the psychiatrist's code of ethics. In telling my patients what to do, I was becoming legally responsible for any ill consequences which might result. Since everything a typical neurotic does eventually has ill consequences, my giving them assignments meant trouble. It meant, in fact, the probable end of my career, a thought which for some reason I found exhilarating. I was like a professional psychiatrist, the very jockstrap of my basic self; I was becoming belly to belly with whim.

In the first few days the dice usually had me express freely my own feelings toward my patients - to break, in effect, the cardinal rule of *all* psychotherapy: do not judge. I began overtly condemning every shabby little weakness I could find in my sniveling, cringing patients. Great gob of God, that was fun. If you remember that for four years I had been acting like a saint, understanding, forgiving and accepting all sorts of human folly, cruelty and nonsense; that I had been thus repressing every normal reactive impulse, you can imagine the joy with which I responded to the dice letting me call my patients sadists, idiots, bastards, sluts, cowards and latent cretins. Joy. I had found another island of joy.

My patients and colleagues didn't seem to appreciate my new roles. From this date my reputation began to decline and my notoriety to rise. My college professor of English at Yale, Orville Boggles, was the first troublemaker.

A big, toothy man with tiny dull eyes, he had been coming to me off and on for six months to overcome a writing block. He hadn't been able to do more than sign his name for three years, and in order to maintain his academic reputation as a scholar he had been reduced to digging out term papers he had written as a sophomore at Michigan State, making small revisions and getting the articles published in quarterlies. Since no one read them past the second paragraph anyway, he hadn't been caught; in fact, on the basis of his impressive list of publications he had received tenure the year before he came to me.

I had been unenthusiastically working on his ambivalent feelings toward his father, his latent homosexuality and his false image of himself, when under the impetus of the dictates of the dice I suddenly found myself one day exploding.

'Boggles,' I said after he arrived one morning (I had always previously addressed him as Professor Boggles), 'Boggles,' I





'But why Africa?'

'Because it has nothing to do with literature, academic advancement and full professorships. You won't be able to fool yourself that you're gathering material for an article. Spend a year in the Congo, try to get involved with a revolutionary group or a counter-revolutionary group, shoot a few people, familiarize yourself with the native drugs, let yourself get seduced by whatever comes along, male, female, animal, vegetable, mineral. After that, if you still feel you want to write about Henry James for the quarterlies, I'll try to help you.'

He was sitting on the edge of the couch looking at me with nervous dignity. He said 'But why should you want me to stop wanting to write?'

'Because as you are now, Boggles, and have been for forty-three years, you're a dead loss. Absolutely. I don't mean to sound critical, but absolutely. Deep down inside you know it, your colleagues know it and at all levels I know it. We've got to change you completely to make you worth taking money from. Normally I'd recommend that you have an affair with a student, but with your personality the only students who might open up for you would be worse off than you and no help.'

Boggles had stood up but I went serenely on.

'What you need is a more extensive personal experience with cruelty, with suffering, hunger, fear, sex. Once you've experienced more fully these basics there might be some hope of a major breakthrough. Until then none.'

Old Boggles had his overcoat on now and with a toothy grimace was backing toward the door.

'Good day, Dr. Rhinehart, I hope you're better soon,' he said.

'And a good day to you, Boggles. I wish I could hope the same for you, but unless you get captured by the Congolese rebels, or get sick in the jungle for eight months or become a Kurtzian ivory trader, I'm afraid there's not much hope.'

I rose from behind my desk to shake hands with him, but he backed out the door. Six days later I got a polite letter from the president of the American Association of Practicing Psychiatrists (AAPP) noting that a patient of mine, a Dr. Orville Boggles of Yale, had paranoid hallucinations about me and had sent a long, nasty, highly literary complaint to the AAPP about my behavior. I sent a note to President Weinstein thank-

ing him for his understanding and a note to Boggles suggesting that the length of his letter to the AAPP indicated progress vis-a-vis his writing block. I also gave him permission to try to have his letter published in the *South Dakota Quarterly Review Journal*.

## Chapter Thirteen

'Jenkins,' I said one morning to the masochist Milquetoast of Madison Avenue, 'have you ever considered rape?'

'I don't understand,' he said.

'Forced carnal knowledge.'

'I ... don't understand how you mean that I should consider it.'

'Have you ever daydreamed of killing someone or of raping someone?'

'No. No, I never have. I feel almost no aggression toward anyone.' He paused. 'Except myself.'

'I was afraid of that, Jenkins, that's why we'd better give serious consideration to rape, theft or murder.'

Jenkins lay neatly and quietly on the couch through this whole interview, not once raising his voice or stirring a muscle.

'You ... you mean daydream about such actions?' he asked.

'I mean commit them. As it is, Jenkins, you're becoming just another dirty old man, aren't you?'

'P-p-pardon?'

'Spend most of your time lying on your crumb-filled bed reading porno and fantasizing about lovely girls who need you to save them. After they've narrowly missed being crushed by the landslide, or cut in two by the cultivator, or stabbed by the lunatic or burnt by the fire, you rescue them and they give you a spiritual kiss on the fingertips, right? But when do you reach a climax, Mr. Jenkins?'

'I ... I don't know what ... I don't understand?'

'Does the final pleasure come when you're comforting the rescued girl or when the flames are licking at her face, the knife scraping along her veins, the cultivator about to mash her potatoes ...? When?'

'But I want to help people. I feel no aggression. Ever.'

'Look, Jenkins, I'm sated with your passivity, your day dreaming. Haven't you ever done anything?'

'No opportunity has ever -'

'Have you ever hurt another human?'

'I can't. I don't want to. I want to save -'

'First you've got to save yourself and that you can only do by breaking your inertia. I'm giving you an assignment for our Friday session. Will you do it for me?'



his elbow and didn't say he was sorry. Rita tried the old game of 'Oh you're so masterful, hit me,' but Jenkins responded by assuring her that no matter how masterful he was he would never hit anyone. She urged him to bite her breasts, but he said something about having weak gums. She tried to irritate him into anger by using her body to arouse him and then deny the desires she had aroused, but Jenkins just sulked until she gave in.

Meanwhile he was trying every trick in the masochist's trade to try to make Rita break off with him. He stood her up on two occasions (Rita sent a bill for her time), accidentally broke her wristwatch (I got the bill) and as a lover usually had his orgasm when she was least expecting it and in the middle of a yawn. Nevertheless, Rita clung lovingly - three hundred dollars a week - on.

At the end of a month of solid success with her, Jenkins was definitely more comfortable with women; he even flirted for five minutes with Miss Reingold. But he was also perilously close to a total nervous breakdown. Being unable to contact a venereal disease, make Rita pregnant, infuriate her, cause her to leave him or fail in any other obvious way, he was desperate. Of course, he'd compensated by accelerating the rate of failure in all other areas of his life. Twice he lost his wallet. He left the water in the bathtub running when he was out and flooded his apartment. Finally, one day he told me he'd lost so much money in the stock market since taking over his own investing, that he'd have to drop therapy.

I urged him to continue, but that afternoon he managed to get hit by a bulldozer while watching some construction and was hospitalized for six weeks. A few months later the dice told me to send him a bill for Rita's services and, I regret to report, he promptly paid it. I've tentatively listed his case as a failure.

Other cases didn't work out too well either. With a woman plagued by compulsive promiscuity I tried the William James method number three for breaking habits: oversatiation. I convinced her to work at a busy Brooklyn brothel for a week, figuring that would be enough to drive anyone to chastity, but she stayed a month. With the money she earned she hired one of her male customers to accompany her on a vacation to Puerto Vallarta. I haven't seen her since, but have tentatively listed her case as a failure also.

My analytic sessions became role-playing sessions without

and play me instead of restricting such role playing to a test life. Everything had to be done with real people in life.

In most cases over the next five months I assigned my clients to quit their jobs, leave their spouses, give up their hobbies, habits and homes, alter their religions, upset their sleeping, eating, copulation, thought habits. In brief, to reach their unexpressed desires, to achieve their unfulfilled potential. But all this without telling them about the effects.

Without introducing the patients to the use of the effects in my later due therapy, the results as you have begun to see were generally disastrous. In addition to two lawsuits, one patient committed suicide (thirty five dollars an hour out the window), one was arrested for leading to the disappearance of a minor, and a last disappeared at sea in a sailing canoe on his way to Tahiti. On the other hand, I had a few distinct successes.

One man, a highly paid advertising executive, gave up his job and family and joined the Peace Corps, spent two years in Peru, wrote a book on taking land reform in underdeveloped countries, a book highly praised by everyone except the governments of Peru and the United States, and is now helping in a cabin in Tennessee writing a book on the effects of underdeveloped and undeveloped minds. Whenever he's in the book he drops in to suggest I write a book about the underdeveloped psyche of psychiatrists.

My other successes were less obvious and more distant. There was Linda Richman, for example. She was a chambermaid who had spent her last four years living in Greenwich Village, doing all the things rich, successful girls of treatment paid to my own chambermaid. I found that she was her third subject, that she had to talk to herself, particularly her promiscuity with indifference and cruelty toward men, and that she staged her life with them. Her monologues were occasionally flooded by Y, phantoms and Freudian allusions and a slightly intended to check my thoughts to readability. Only three weeks after leaving the due date, she had a rather remarkable success with her last subject, more keyed up than usual, more happy, less nervous.







her elbows and without looking at me, spat, clearly and profusely, in a high arc, onto the rug in front of my desk.

'I don't blame you. I've been acting like an automaton. Or, more concretely, an ass.'

Miss Reichman sat up on the couch and turned from the waist to stare at me.

'What did you say?'

'You feel you don't know what I said?' But as I said this I put on a mock psychiatrist face and tried to grin intimately.

'Holy shit, there's a human being in there after all. [Pause] Well. Say something else. I've never heard you say anything before.'

'Well, Linda, I'd say it was time to end non-directive therapy. Time you heard some of my feelings about you. Right?'

'That's what I just said.'

'First, I think we'd better acknowledge that you're outstandingly conceited. Second, that sexually you may offer much less than many women, since you are thin, with, to judge by superficial appearances only, a smallish bosom necessitating falsies [she sneered], and you probably bring the male racing to a climax before he's got his fly totally unzipped. Thirdly, that intellectually you are extremely limited in the depth and breadth of your reading and understanding. In summation, that as human beings go you are mediocre in all respects except in the quantity of your fortune. The number of men you've slept with and who've proposed as well as propositioned, is a reflection of the openness of your legs and of your wallet, not of your personality.'

Her sneer had expanded until it had nowhere else to go on her face and so spread to her shoulders and back, which writhed theatrically away from me in disdain. By the time I finished, her face was flushed and she spoke with an exaggerated slowness and serenity.

'Oh poor poor Linda. Only big Lukie Rhinehart can save cesspool soul from hardening into concrete shit. [She abruptly changed pace] You conceited bastard. Who do you think you are sounding off about me? You don't know me at all. I haven't told you anything about myself except a few sensational superficialities. And you judge me by these.'

'Do you want to show me your breasts?'

'Fuck you.'

'Do you have some essays, or stories or poems, or paintings that you can show me?'

'You can't judge a person by measurements or by essays. When I make love to a man they don't forget it. They know they've had a woman, and not some fluffed-up iceberg. And you'll hide behind your precious ethics and feel superior because all you see is the surface.'

'What other good qualities do you have?'

'I call a spade a spade. I know I'm not perfect and I say so, and I've learned that you psychiatrists are priggish little voyeurs and I tell you, and that's why you all end up attacking me. You can't stand the truth.'

'My ethics kept me from making love to you?'

'Yes, unless you're a fairy, like another headshrinker I knew.'

'Let me then formally announce that in my future relations with you I will not seek to maintain the traditional patient-doctor relationship and I will *not* abide by the standard of ethics set down in the code of the American Association of Practicing Psychiatrists. From now on I shall respond to you as human to human. As psychiatrist human I will advise you, but no more. How's that?'

Linda shifted her feet to the floor and looked over at me with a slow smile, meant to suggest sexiness? She was, in fact, reasonably sexy. She was slender, clear-complexioned, full-lipped. As long as she had been my patient, however, I had not responded to her sexually one millimeter, or to any other female patient in five years, despite writhings, declarations, propositions, strippings and attempted rapes - all of which had occurred during one session or another. But the doctor-patient relationship froze my sexual awareness as completely as doing fifty push ups under a cold shower. Looking at Linda Reichman smile and perceptibly arch her back and project her (true or false?) bosom, I felt my loins, for the first time in my analytic history, respond.

Her smile slowly curled into a sneer.

'It's better than you *were*, but that's not saying much.'

'I thought you wanted to feel my prick.'

'I can't be bothered.'

'In that case, let's get back to you. Lie down again and let your mind go.'

'What do you mean, lie down again. You just said you were

going to be human. Humans don't talk to each other with their backs to each other.'

'True. So go ahead, we'll talk . . . eyeball to eyeball.'

She looked at me again and her eyes narrowed slightly and her upper lip twitched twice. She stood up and faced me. The light from my desk picked up a light perspiration on her face, which revealed this time no suggestive smile – although one may have been intended – but rather a tense grimace. She roved slightly toward me, unbuttoning her skirt at the side as she approached.

'I think maybe it would be good for both of us – if we got to know each other physically. Don't you?'

She came to the chair and let her skirt fall to the floor. Her half-slip must have gone with it. She had on white silk bikini-panties but no stockings. Sitting down in my lap (the chair tipped back another three inches with an undignified squeak), her eyes half closed, she looked up into my face and said drowsily, 'Don't you?'

Frankly, the answer was yes. I had a fine erection, my pulse was forty percent, my loins were being activated by all the requisite hormones and my mind, as nature intended it in such cases, was functioning vaguely and without energy. Her lips and tongue came wetly against and into my mouth, her fingers along my neck and into my hair. She was role-playing Brigitte Bardot and I was responding accordingly. After a prolonged, satisfactory kiss, she stood up, and with a set, drowsy, mechanical half-smile removed, item by item, her blouse, bra (she hadn't needed falsies), bracelet, wristwatch and panties.

Since I continued to sit with a blissfully unplanned and idiotic expression, she hesitated, and sensed that somewhere about now was my cue to embrace her passionately, carry her to the couch and consummate our union. I decided to miss the cue. After this brief hesitation (her now wet upper lip twitched once), she knelt down beside me and fingered my fly. She undid the belt, a hook and lowered the zipper. Since I didn't move one millimeter (voluntarily) she had trouble extricating her desired object from my boxer undershorts. When she had succeeded in freeing him from his cage, he stood with dignified stiffness, trembling slightly, like a young scholar about to have a doctoral hood lowered over his head. (The rest of me was cold and immobile as the code of ethics of the AAPP encourages us.) She leaned forward to put her mouth over it.

'Did you ever see the movie, *The Treasure of Sierra Madre*?' I asked.

She stopped, startled, then closing her eyes completely, drew my penis into her mouth.

She did what intelligent women do in such cases. Although the warmth of her mouth and the pressure of her tongue produced predictable feelings of euphoria, I found I was not much mentally excited by what was happening. That mad scientist dice man was looking at everything too hard.

After what began to seem like an embarrassingly long time (I sat mute, dignified, professional through it all), she rose up and whispered, 'Take off your clothes and come.' She moved nicely to the couch and lay down on her stomach with her face to the wall.

I felt that if I sat immobile any longer she would snap out of it and become angry, get dressed and demand her money back. I had seen her in two roles, sex kitten and intellectual bitch. Was there some sort of third Linda? I walked over (my left hand pants clutching) to the couch and sat down. Linda's white, nude body looked cold and babyish against the formal brown leather. Her face was turned away but my weight on the side of the couch let her know I had arrived.

Whatever limitations Linda might have as a human being seemed adequately compensated for by a round and apparently firm posterior. Her instinct - or probably her well-learned habit - of stuffing her buttocks at an obviously aroused man seemed correct. My hand actually arrived within two and one-quarter inches of that flesh before the mad scientist in the London fog got the message through.

'Roll over,' I said (Get her best weapon aimed elsewhere.)

She rolled slowly over, reached up two white arms and pulled my neck down until our mouths met. She began to groan authoritatively. She pressed first her mouth hard against mine and then, somehow getting me to lift my legs up on the couch beside hers, pressed her abdomen hard into mine. She tongued, writhed, groaned and clutched with intelligent abandon. I just lay, wondering not too acutely what to do.

Apparently I had missed another cue, because she broke our kiss and pushed me slightly away. For an instant I thought she might be abandoning her role, but her half-closed eyes and twisted mouth told me otherwise. She had parted her legs and was reaching for potential posterity.

'Linda,' I said quietly. (No nonsense about movies this time.)

'Linda,' I said again. One of her hands was playing Virgil to my Dante and trying to lead him into the underworld, but I held Dante back. 'Linda,' I said a third time.

'Put it in,' she said.

'Linda, wait a minute.'

'What's the matter, put it in.' She opened her eyes and stared up, not seeming to recognize me.

'Linda, I've got my period.'

Now why I said that Freud certainly knows, but searching for absurdity I had said it, and, realizing its psychoanalytic meaning, I felt quite shamed.

Linda either hadn't read Freud or didn't care; she was, I saw regretfully, on the verge of passing from Bardot to bitch without any intermediate third Linda.

She blinked once, started to say something which came out as a snort, twitched her upper lip three, four times, half closed her eyes again, groaned and said, 'Oh come, please come into me, now. Now.'

Although her hands weren't pulling, my stallion responded to those words with enthusiasm and had galloped to within one and one-eighth inches of the valley of the stars when the mad scientist pulled the reins.

'Linda, there's something I'd like you to do, first,' I said (What? What? For God's sake, what?) This was, in fact, the perfect statement: she couldn't tell whether it was something sexual I wanted her to do, in which case she could revel in her Bardot role, or something impractical having to do with my being a psychiatrist. Curiosity, stronger than Bardot or bitch, looked out of fully open eyes.

'What?' she asked.

'Lie here just as you are without moving, and close your eyes.'

She looked at me - our bodies were separated by only three or four inches and one of her hands was still pulling me toward the great melting pot - and again she was neither Bardot nor bitch. When she sighed, let go of me and closed her eyes, I eased myself to a seat on the edge of the couch again.

'Try to relax,' I said.

Her eyes shot open and her head jerked up like a doll's.

'What the hell do I want to relax for?'

'Please, for me, do this ... one thing. Lie there in your full beauty and let your arms, legs, face, everything relax. Please.'



bitchy self essentially, complaining against the parents but not able to feel sorry for the little girl. She felt only bitterness.

'Look very closely at the little girl in the field, Linda. Look very closely at her. [Pause] The little girl -?' [Pause]

'The little girl ... is crying.'

'Why is the little ... does she have ... does the girl have any flowers?'

'Yes, she has ... It's a rose, a white rose. I don't know where ...'

[Pause]

'What is she ... how does she feel toward the white rose?'

'... The white rose is the only ... thing in the world which she can talk to, the only thing that ... loves her ... She holds the flower in front of her eyes by the stem and she talks to it and ... no ... she doesn't even hold it. It floats to her ... like magic, but she never, not once ever, touches it, and she never kisses it. She looks at it and it sees her and in those moments ... in those moments ... the little girl ... is happy. The white rose, with the white rose ... she is happy.'

After another minute Linda's eyes blinked open. She looked over at me, at my wilted penis, at the walls, the ceiling. At the ceiling. A buzzer sounded for what I now realized may have been the third or fourth time and I started.

'The hour's up,' she said dazedly and then added: 'What a funny, stupid story,' but without bitterness, dreamily.

Except for the silent restoration of our clothing, the session was over.



During these first months of dice living I never consciously decided to let the dice take over my whole life or to aim at becoming an organism whose every act was determined by the dice. The thought would have frightened me then. I tended to restrict my options so that Lil and my colleagues wouldn't begin to suspect that I was into anything slightly unorthodox. I kept my shimmering green cubes hidden carefully from everyone, consulting them surreptitiously when necessary. But I found myself adapting quickly to following the die's sporadic whims. I might resent a particular command, but like a well-oiled automaton I went and did the job.

The dice sent me to bars scattered throughout the city to sit, sip, listen, chat. They picked out strangers to whom I was sent to talk. They chose roles that I played with these strangers. I would be a veteran outfielder with the Detroit Tigers in town for a Yankee series (Bronx bar), English reporter with the *Guardian* (the Barbizon Plaza), playwright homosexual, alcoholic college professor, escaped criminal and so on. The dice determined that I try to seduce stranger chosen at random from the phone book of Brooklyn (actually Mrs. Anna Maria Sploghio was the lucky lady and she totally repulsed me. Thank God), that I try to borrow ten dollars from stranger 'X' (another failure), that I give twenty dollars to stranger 'Y' (he threatened to call the police, then took the money and ran, not walked, away). In bars, restaurants, theaters, taxis, stores -- whenever out of sight of those who knew me -- I was soon never myself, my old 'normal self.' I went bowling. I signed up at Vic Tanny's to muscle my middle. I went to concerts, baseball games, sit-ins, open parties; anything and everything that I had never done. I now created as options, and the dice threw me from one to the other -- and rarely the same man from day to day.

New places and new roles forced me into acute awareness of how others were responding to me. When a human is being himself, flowing with his inner nature, wearing his natural appropriate masks, integrated with his environment, he is normally unaware of subtleties in another's behavior. Only if the other person breaks a conventional pattern is awareness stimu-

lated. However, breaking my established patterns was threatening to my deeply ingrained selves and pricked me to a level of consciousness which is unusual, unusual since the whole instinct of human behavior is to find environments congenial to the relaxation of consciousness. By creating problems for myself I created thought.

I also created problems.

Although I tried to act so I would always give Lil a 'rational' explanation for my eccentricities, I let the dice increasingly determine what kind of a father and husband I would be, especially during the three weeks Lil, Larry, Evie and I (for three-day weekends) spent in our rented farmhouse on eastern Long Island.

Now historically, my friends, I had been a withdrawn, somewhat absentee father. My contacts with my two children had consisted primarily of : (a) yelling at them to stop yelling when I was on the telephone in the living room ; (b) yelling at them to go play someplace else when I wanted to make love to Lil during the day ; (c) yelling at them to obey their Mommy when they were most blatantly disobeying their Mommy ; (d) yelling at Larry for being stupid when trying to do math homework.

There were times when I would not yell at them, it is true. Whenever I was daydreaming about something ('Rhinehart Discovers Missing Link in Freudian Theory!' 'Sophia Loren to Divorce Ponti for NY Psychiatrist.' 'Incredible Stock Market Coup by M.D. Amateur'), or thinking about something (how to discover missing link, win Miss Loren, make a coup) I would talk calmly to the children about whatever it was they felt like talking about ('That's a beautiful painting, Larry, especially the chimney.' Lil 'That's a ballistic missile.'), and even, upon occasion, play with them. ('Bam bam, I got you Daddy.' I collapse to the floor. 'Oh, Daddy, you're only wounded'.)

I liked my kids but primarily as potential Junga, Adlers and Anna Freuds to my Sigmund. I was much too wrapped up in being a great psychiatrist to compete in the game of being a father. My paternal behavior manifested flaws.

Among the alternatives which I gave the dice to consider were some which expressed the fond father buried deep within, and others which gave full rein to the not so benevolent despot.

On the one hand the dice twice determined that I pay extra attention to my children, that I spend a minimum of five hours

a day with them for each of three days. (Such devotion! Such sacrificial Mothers of the world, what would you give to spend only five hours a day with your children?)

In September one day, after breakfast in the big old kitchen with white cupboards and built-in sunshine in the big old farmhouse on the big plot surrounded by big trees and bright, flowing fields of poison ivy, I asked the children what they wanted to do that day.

Larry eyed me from his seat by the toaster. He had short red pants, white (in places) T-shirt, bare feet, built-in scratches and scabs on both chubby legs and bleached yellow hair hiding most of his suspicious frown.

'Play,' he answered.

'Play what?'

'I already took out the garbage yesterday.'

'I'd like to play with you today. What do you plan to do?'

From her seat Evie looked at Larry wondering what they were going to do.

'You want to play with us?'

'Yes.'

'You won't hog the dump truck?'

'No. I'll let you be the complete boss.'

'You will?'

'Yep.'

'Hooray, let's go play in the sand.'

The sand was actually the farmer's plowed field, which angled the farmhouse on three and a half sides. There, lying in an intricate maze among the green explosions of age, was a road system to put Robert Moses to shame. In an hour I traveled in a 1963 pickup truck (Tonka, 00 h.p., c.c. engine, needed new paint job) over these roads. There frequent criticism that I wrecked too many secondary while maneuvering my bulk down tertiary roads, and nnels that had been standing for years through cyclones rricanes (three and half days through one brief shower) lapsed under the weight of my one errant elbow. Other- e children enjoyed my presence, and I enjoyed the d them. Children are really quite nice once you get them.

e more than nice.

'Larry said to me later that day when we were lying nd watching the surf of the Atlantic come rolling thampton Beach, 'why does the ocean make waves?'

I considered my knowledge of oceans, tides and such, and decided on

'Wind.'

'But sometimes the wind doesn't blow, but the ocean always makes waves.'

'It's the god of the sea breathing.'

This time he considered.

'Breathing what?' he asked.

'Breathing water. In and out, in and out.'

'Where?'

'In the middle of the ocean.'

'How big is he?'

'One mile tall and as fat and muscley as Daddy.'

'Don't ships bump his head?'

'Sometimes. Then he makes hurricanes. That's what's called an "angry sea".'

'Daddy, why don't you play with us more?'

It was like dropping a heavy sea anchor into my stomach. The phrase 'I'm too busy' came into my mind and I flushed with shame. 'I'd like to but -' entered and the flush got deeper.

'I don't know,' I said and huffed down to the surf and bulldozed my way in. By floating on my back just beyond the breakers all I could see was the sky, rising and falling.

Both the dice and my own desires permitted me to be with the children more in August and September. The dice once dictated that I take them to a Coney Island Amusement Park for a day, and I look back on that afternoon as one of the two or three absolute islands of joy in my life.

I brought toys home to them spontaneously a couple of times and their gratitude at this unexplained, unprecedented gift of the god was almost enough to make me give up psychiatry and the dice and devote myself to fulltime fatherhood. The third time I tried it, Larry's crane wouldn't work and the children fought solidly for three days over the other one. I considered vacationing in Alaska, the Sahara, the Amazon, anywhere, but *alone*.

The dice made me a very unreliable disciplinarian. They willed that in the first two weeks in September I should never yell, scold or punish the children for anything. Never had the house been so quiet and peaceful for so long. In the last week of September (school had begun) the dice ordered that I be an absolute dictator regarding homework, table manners, noise,

neatness and *respect*. Fifteen hard spansks were to be administered for all transgressions. By the sixth day of my trying to enforce my standards Lil, the maid and the children locked themselves in the playroom and refused to let me enter. When Lil chastised me for my sudden week-long spasm of tyranny I explained that I'd been overwhelmed by a speech by Spiro Agnew on the evils of permissiveness.

Events like these strained, to say the least, my relations with Lil. One does not live seven years with a person – an intelligent, sensitive person who (periodically) shows you great affection – without forming certain emotional ties. You do not father two handsome children by her without strengthening that bond.

Lil and I had met and mated when we were both twenty-five. We formed a deep, irrational, obviously neurotic need for one another: love – one of society's many socially accepted forms of madness. We got married: society's solution to loneliness, lust and laundry. We soon discovered that there is absolutely nothing wrong with being married which being single can't cure. Or so, for a while, it seemed to us.

I was in medical school earning nothing, and Lil, the spoiled daughter of Peter Daupmann, successful real estate man, went to work to support me. Lil, sole support of Lucius Rhinehart, M.D. to be, became pregnant. Lucius, practical, firm (except at confining sperm to their quarters), urged abortion. Lil, sensitive, loving, female, urged child. Practical man sulked. Female fed foetus, foetus left female: handsome son Lawrence: happiness, pride, poverty. After two months, spoiled child Lil works again for dedicated, practical, impoverished Luke, M.D. (but under analysis and interning and not practicing). Lil soon develops healthy resentment of work, poverty and dedicated, practical M.D. Our bond to each other grows, but the intense pleasureable passion of yesteryear diminishes.

In brief, as the alert reader has concluded long before this, we were *typically* married. We had happy moments which we could share with no one; we had our insider jokes; we had our warm, sensual, sexual love as we had our mutual concern for (well, Lil anyway), interest in and pride in our children; and we had our two increasingly frustrated, isolated private selves. The aspirations we had for these selves did not find fulfilment in marriage, and all the twisting and writhing on the bed together couldn't erase this fact, although our very disaffection united us.

Now the dice treated everything and everyone as objects and forced me to do the same. The emotions I was to feel for all things were determined by the dice and not by the intrinsic relationship between me and the person or thing. Love I saw as an irrational, arbitrary binding relationship to another object. It was compulsive. It was an important part of the historical self. It must be destroyed. Lillian must become an object: an object of as little intrinsic effect upon or interest for me as ... Nora Hammerhill (name picked at random from Manhattan phone book). Impossible, you say? Perhaps. But if a human being can be changed, this most basic of relationships must be susceptible to alteration. So I tried.

The dice sometimes refused to cooperate. They commanded me to show her concern and generosity. They bought her the first piece of jewelry I'd given her in six years. She accused me of infidelity. Reassured, she was very pleased. The dice sent us to three dramas on three consecutive nights (I had averaged three plays a year, two of which were inevitably musicals with record short runs); we both felt cultured, avant-garde, unphilistine. We swore we'd see a play a week all year. The dice said otherwise.

The dice one week requested that I give in to her every whim. Although she twice called me spineless and at the end of the week seemed disgusted with my lack of authority, I found myself listening and responding to her at times where normally I wouldn't have known she existed, and at times I touched her with my thoughtfulness.

Lil even enjoyed the dice's sudden passion for awkward sexual positions, although when the dice ordered me to penetrate her from thirteen distinctly different positions before reaching my climax, she became quite angry as I was trying to maneuver her into position eleven. When she wondered why I was getting so many strange whims these days, I suggested that perhaps I was pregnant.

But the medium is the message, and the dice decisions, no matter how pleasant they might sometimes be to Lil or Arlene or others, acted to separate me from people. Sexual dice decisions were particularly effective in destroying natural intimacy (try convincing a woman that one awkward sexual position is all that will satisfy you when she feels otherwise). Such dice commands obviously involved my being able to manipulate (both psychologically *and* physically) the woman as well as myself. They once perversely chose that 'I not partake of



my passionate Platonic love, stuck my fingers in her, kissed her breasts, her mouth . . . in another few minutes I would have been facing the same dilemma a second time with no escape possible, but remembering, I jumped off the couch and began conscientiously increasing my outer decor.





but when she unzipped my fly I began reading from the Sermon on the Mount again.

'What the hell's the matter with you today?' she sneered. 'You're even worse than you were last time.'

'I'm trying to show you that there's a spiritual love far more enriching than the most perfect of physical experiences.'

'You really believe that crap?' she asked.

'I believe that all men are lost until they become filled with a great warm love for all men, a spiritual love, the love of Jesus.'

'You really believe that crap?'

'Yes.'

'I want my money back.'

I almost cried that day when I met Jake for lunch. I so wanted to help him, trapped by that relentless overcharged engine of his, zooming through life missing everything, and especially missing the great love that filled me. He was forking down great gobs of beef stew and lima beans and telling me about a patient of his who had committed suicide by mistake. I was searching for some way to break down the seemingly impenetrable wall of his armored self and finding none. As the meal progressed I became sadder and sadder. I felt tears forming in my eyes. I irritably stopped the sentimentality and searched again for some way to his heart.

'Some way to his heart,' was the very phrase I thought in that day. A certain vocabulary and style go with every personality and every religion; under the influence of being Jesus Christ I found I loved people, and the experience expressed itself in unfamiliar actions and in unfamiliar language.

'Jake,' I finally said. 'Do you ever feel great warmth and love toward people?'

He stopped with fork at mouth and gaped at me for a second.

'What's that?' he said.

'Do you ever, have you ever felt a great rush of warmth and love toward some person or toward all humanity?'

He stared a moment more, then said:

'No. Freud associated such feelings with pantheism and the stage of development of two-year-olds. I'd say the irrational flooding of love was regression.'

'And you've never felt it?'

'Nope. Why?'

'But what if such feelings are ... wonderful. What if they seem better, more desirable than any other state? Would its being a regressive mode of feeling still make it undesirable?'

'Sure. Who's the patient? That Cannon kid you were telling me about?'

'What if I were to tell you that I feel such a surge of love and warmth for everyone?'

This stopped the steam-shovel machine.

'And especially love for you,' I added.

Jake blinked behind his glasses and looked - it's only my interpretation of a facial expression I'd never seen on his face before - frightened.

'I'd say you were regressing,' he said nervously. 'You're blocked in some line of development and to escape responsibility and to find help you feel this great childish love for everyone.' He began eating again. 'It'll pass.'

'Do you think I'm joking about this feeling, Jake?'

He looked away, his eyes jumping from object to object around the room like trapped sparrows.

'Can't tell, Luke. You've been acting strangely lately. Might be a game, might be sincere. Maybe you ought to get back in analysis, talk it up with Tim there. I can't judge you here as a friend.'

'All right, Jake. But I want you to know that I love you and I don't think it has anything at all to do with object cathexis or the anal stage.'

He blinked at me nervously, not eating.

'It's a Christeean love, or rather, a Judaic-Christ-eean love, of course,' I added.

He was looking more and more terrified. I began to be afraid for him.

'I'm only referring to warm, passionate brotherly love, Jake, it's nothing to worry about.'

He smiled nervously, snuck in a quick squint and asked: 'Have these attacks very often, Luke?'

'Please don't worry about it. Tell me more about that patient. Have you finished your article about it?'

Jake was soon back on the main line, throttle wide open, his colleague, love-filled Lucius Rhinehart, successfully side-tracked at Podunk Junction, there to be stationed hopefully until it was possible to write an article about him.

'Sit down, my son,' I said to Eric Cannon when he entered my

little green room at QSH that afternoon. I had been feeling very warm and Jesusy before buzzing for him to be brought in and, standing behind the desk, I looked at him now with love. He looked back at me as though he believed he could see into my soul, his large black eyes glimmering with apparent amusement. Despite his gray khakis and torn T-shirt he was serene and dignified, a lithe, long-haired Christ who looked as though he did gymnastics every day and had fucked every girl on the block.

He dragged a chair over near the window as he always did and flopped down with casual unconcern, his legs stretched out in front of him, a hole staring mutely at me from the bottom of his left sneaker.

Bowing my head, I said: 'Let us pray.'

He stopped open-mouthed in mid-yawn, his arms clasped behind his head, and stared. Then he drew in his legs, leaned forward and lowered his head.

'Dear God,' I said aloud, 'Help us this hour to serve thy will, be in tune with Thy soul and breathe each breath to Thy glory. Amen.'

I sat down with my eyes still lowered, wondering where I went from here. In most of my early sessions with Eric, I had been my usual non-directive self and, much to my discomfiture, he became the first patient in recorded psychiatric history who, through his first three consecutive therapy sessions, was able to sit silent and thoroughly relaxed. In the fourth he talked nonstop the entire hour on the state of the ward and world. In subsequent sessions he had alternated between silence and soliloquy. In the previous three weeks I had tried only a couple of dice-dictated experiments and had assigned Eric to try feeling love for all figures of authority but he had met all my ploys with silence. When I raised my head now, he was looking at me alertly. Black eyes pinning me where I sat, he reached into his pocket, leaned forward and wordlessly offered me a Winston.

'Thank you, no,' I said.

'Just one Jesus to another,' he said with a mocking smile.

'No thank you.'

'What's with the prayer bit?' he asked.

'I feel . . . religious today,' I answered, 'and I—'

'Good for you,' he said.

'—wanted you to share my feeling.'

'Who are you to be religious?' he asked with sudden coolness.

'I ... I am ... I am Jesus,' I answered.

For a moment his face held its cool alertness, then it broke into a contemptuous smile.

'You haven't got the will,' he said.

'What do you mean?'

'You don't suffer, you don't care enough, you don't have the fire to be a Christ actually living on the earth.'

'And you, my son?'

'And I do. I've had a fire burning in my gut every moment of my life to wake this world up, to lash the fucking bastards out of the temple, to bring a sword to their peace-plagued souls.'

'But what of love?'

'Love?' he barked at me, his body now straight and tense in the chair. 'Love ...' he said more quietly. 'Yeah, love. I feel love for those who suffer, those on the rack of the machine, but not for the guys at the controls, not for the torturers, not for them.'

'Who are they?'

'You, buddy, and every guy in a position to change the machine or bust it or quit working on it who doesn't.'

'I'm part of the machine?'

'Every moment you play along with this farce of therapy in this nurse-infested prison, you're driving your nail into the old cross.'

'But I want to help you, to give you health and happiness.'

'Careful, you'll make me puke.'

'And if I stopped working for the machine?'

'Then there'd be some hope for you. Then I might listen; then you would count.'

'But if I leave the system how will I ever see you again?'

'There are visiting hours. And I'm only going to be with you here for a little while.'

We sat in our respective chairs eyeing each other with alert curiosity.

'You aren't surprised that I began our session with a prayer or that I am Jesus?'

'You play games. I don't know why, but you do. It makes me hate you less than the others but know I should never trust you.'

'Do you think you're Christ?'

His eyes shifted away from mine to the sooty window,

'He who has ears to hear let him hear,' he said.

'I'm not sure you love enough,' I said. 'I feel that love is the key to it all, and you seem to have hate.'

He returned his gaze to me slowly.

'You must fight, Rhinehart. No games. You must know your friend and love him and know your enemy and attack.'

'That's hard,' I said.

'Just open your eyes. He who has eyes to see, let him see.'

'I'm always seeing good guys and bad guys yo-yoing up and down in the same person. I never see a target. I always want to forgive, to love.'

'The man behind the machine, Rhinehart, and the man who is part of the machine: they're not hard to see. The lying and cheating and manipulating and killing: you've seen them. Just walk along the street and open your eyes and you won't lack for targets.'

'But do you ask us to kill them?'

'I ask you to fight them. There's a worldwide war on and everybody's drafted and you're either for the machine or you're against it, a part of it, or getting your balls raked by it every day. Life today is a war whether you want it to be or not, and so far, Rhinehart, you've been doing your part for the other side.'

'But thou shalt love thy enemies,' I said.

'Sure. And thou shalt hate evil,' he answered.

'Judge not, that ye be not judged.'

'He who sits on a fence gets it up his ass,' he replied with a smile.

'I lack the fire: I like everybody,' I said sadly.

'You lack the fire.'

'What am I good for then? I wish to be a religious person.'

'A disciple, maybe,' he said.

'One of the twelve?'

'Most likely. You charge every body with sin.'

Sitting opposite Arthur Terrance Jones a half hour later I felt depressed and tired and unhappy and alone. Since an usual Jones was now so far from home, I was isolated in our prime world and could not find a person willing to try to carry out my life.

'Mr. Jones, I finally am looking at the world today and from this time, although I agree that people are a good thing,



thus I can help you. I will help you. But let me ask one favor of you.'

When I turned back to him he was leaning forward on the edge of the chair with concentrated animal tension. When I paused, he frowned and whispered out a 'How?'

That frown and whisper warned me that the two possible 'favors' I had in mind would both fail: 'Come and see me at my office' and 'be my friend.' A man didn't befriend his jailer for giving him freedom since the freedom was deserved, and the doctor-patient relation had failure built into it. I stood looking at him blankly.

'What do you want me to do?' he asked.

Outside I heard a boat's horn from the river groan twice, like warning snorts.

'Nothing,' I said. 'Nothing. I just remembered that I want to help you. Period. You don't have to do anything. You'll go free. Outside, what you do is what you do. You'll be free of this hospital and free of me.'

He stared suspiciously and I stared back, feeling serious and ham-actor noble. The urge to suggest verbally that I was being great for doing this was strong, but humble Jesus won out.

'Come on,' I said. 'Let's go and get your clothes and get out of here.'

As it turned out, it took more than an hour to get Arturo Toscanini Jones released and even then, as I had feared, it was illegal. I got him released from the ward in my custody, but such a release did not give him permission to leave the hospital. That took formal action of one of the directors and was impossible for that afternoon. I'd talk to Dr. Mann at lunch on Friday, or maybe phone.

I drove Jones to Manhattan and then uptown to his mother's home at 142nd Street. Neither of us said a single word during the entire drive and when I let him out he said only: 'Thanks for the ride.'

'That's okay,' I answered.

After a barely perceptible pause he slammed the door and strode away.

Strike up another scoreless inning for Jesus.

I was exhausted by the time I had gotten Arturo released from the hospital and my silence with him in the car was partly fatigue. Trying minute after minute to be someone not totally natural to the personality, as Jesus was for me, was hard work.



Impossible work, as a matter of fact. During that whole I noticed that after about forty minutes of being a love Jesus my system would simply break down into apathy and indifference. If I continued the role past the forty-minute point it was purely mechanical rather than felt.

As I drove toward my rendezvous with Arlene my blear mind tried to scrutinize my relations with her. Christianity frowned on adultery: this much I was able to come up with. Our relationship was a sin. Should Jesus simply avoid a rendezvous with his mistress? No. He would want to express his love for her. His agape. He would want to remind her of various relevant commandments.

Such was the intention of Jesus when he met Mrs. Jacob Ecstein that afternoon at the corner of 125th Street and Lexington Avenue in Harlem and drove to an obscure section of the parking lot at La Guardia Airport overlooking the bay. The woman was cheerful and relaxed and spoke during most of the drive about *Portnov's Complaint*, a book which Jesus had not read. It was clear from her speaking, however, that the author of the novel had not discovered love, and that the effect upon Mrs. Ecstein was to increase her cynical, guiltless, shameless devil may care immersion in her gin. It seemed to Jesus precisely the wrong mood for his beginning to discuss Judaeo-Christian love.

'Arlene,' spoke Jesus, after he had parked, 'do you ever feel great warmth and love toward people?'

'Only for you, lover,' she replied.

'Have you never felt a great rush of warmth and love toward some person or toward all humanity?'

The woman cocked her head and thought.

'Occasionally.'

'To what do you attribute it?'

'Alcohol.'

The woman unzipped the fly of Jesus and reached a hand and enclosed the Sacred Tool. It was, all accounts agree, ed only with agape.

'My daughter,' he said, 'are you not concerned with causing happiness to your husband or to Lillian?'

He stared at him.

'Of course not. I love this.'

'Are your husband's feelings of no concern to you?'

'Jake's feelings,' she shouted. 'Jake is completely well-ed. He doesn't have any feelings.'

'Not even love?'

'Perhaps once a week he has that.'

'But Lillian has feelings. God has feelings.'

'I know, and I think what you're doing to her is cruel.'

'That is true, and you and Dr. Rhinehart must stop doing that which is so clearly sinful and which must hurt her.'

'We're not doing anything, it's *you* that makes her suffer.'

'Dr. Rhinehart will be a better man.'

'Good. I hate to see her so upset with you.' She gave the Sacred Tool a little friendly squeeze and then lowered her head to his lap and sucked in the Spiritual Spaghetti.

'But Arlene!' He said. 'Dr. Rhinehart's making love to you is fornication, is what might hurt her.'

The woman tempted Jesus further with her serpent's tongue, but producing no measurable effect, raised herself. Denied her sinful pleasure she looked peevish.

'What are you talking about? What's fornication, another of your perversions?'

'Physical intercourse with Dr. Rhinehart is a sin.'

'Who's this Dr. Rhinehart you keep talking about? What's the matter with you today?'

'What you have been doing is cruel and selfish and against the Word of God. Your affair might have disastrous effects upon Lillian and the children.'

'How!?'

'If they found out.'

'She'd only divorce you.'

Jesus stared at the woman.

'We are speaking of human beings and of the Sacred Institution of Marriage,' He said.

'I don't know what you're talking about.'

Jesus became wrathful and thrust the woman's head back and zipped up the Holy Fly.

'You are so buried in your sin you cannot see the light.'

The woman was angry too.

'You've been enjoying yourself for the last ten years all of a sudden you discover sin and that's the end.'

'Dr. Rhinehart is a sinner too.'

The woman poked back at the Christ.

'Not much of a one today,' she said.

Jesus stared out through the window of the Sacred Cruiser plodding across the hot, dry, dusty desert following it swerved away and disappeared into the distance.



## Chapter Sixteen

Ego, my friends, ego. The more I sought to destroy it through the dice the greater it grew. Each tumble of a die chipped off another splinter of the old self to feed the growing tissues of the dice man ego. I was killing past pride in myself as analyst, as article writer, as good-looking male, as loving husband, but every corpse was fed to the cannibalistic ego of that super-human creature I felt I was becoming. How proud I am of being the Dice Man! Whose primary purpose is supposedly to kill all sense of pride in self. The only options I never permitted were those which might challenge his power and glory. All values might be shat upon except that. Take away that identity from me and I am a trembling dread-filled clod, alone in an empty universe. With determination and dice, I am God.

Once I wrote down as an option (one chance in six) that I could (for a month) disobey any of the dice decisions if I felt like it and if I shook a subsequent odd number. I was frightened by the possibility. Only the realization that the act of 'disobedience' would in fact be an act of obedience removed my panic. The dice neglected the option. Another time I *thought* of writing that from then on all dice decisions would be recommendations and not commands. In effect, I would be changing the role of dice from commander-in-chief to advisory council. The threat of having 'free will' again paralysed me. I never wrote the option.

The dice continually humbled me. They ordered me to get drunk one Saturday: an act which I had found to be inconsistent with my dignity. Being drunk meant an absence of self-control which was inconsistent also with the detached, experimental creature I was becoming as the Dice Man. However, I enjoyed it. The letting go was not very different from the insanities I had been committing while sober. I spent the evening with Lil and the Ecsteins and at midnight began making paper airplanes out of the manuscript pages of my proposed book on sadism and flying them out the window onto 72nd Street. My drunken pawing of Arlene was interpreted as drunken pawing. The incident marked another piece of evidence of the slow disintegration of Lucius Rhinehart.

I provided my friends with plenty of other pieces of evidence. I rarely ate lunch with my colleagues anymore since I

usually was sent by the dice to other places whenever I had free time. When I did lunch with them the dice often had dictated some eccentric role or action which seemed to unsettle them. One day during a forty-eight hour total fast (except for water) which the die had dealt me, I felt weak and decided not to let the die send me anyplace: I would share my fast with Tim, Jake and Renata.

They talked, as they had for several months, primarily to each other. Whenever they directed a question or comment to me they did it warily, like animal trainers feeding a wounded lion. This particular afternoon they were talking about the hospital's policy of releasing patients conditionally, and I, staring hysterically at Jake's sirloin steak, was drunk with hunger. Dr. Mann was slobbering his scallops all over the table and his napkin, and Dr. Felloni was delicately escorting each separate tiny piece of lamb (lamb!) to her mouth and I was insane. Jake as usual managed to talk and eat faster than both the others together.

'Got to keep 'em in,' he said. 'Harmful to us, the hospital, society, everybody, if a patient is prematurely released. Read Bowerly.'

Silence (Actually chewing [I heard every nibble], other restaurant voices: laughter, dishes clattering, sizzling [I heard every single bubble explosion] and a loud voice which said, 'Never again!')

'You're absolutely right, Jake' I uttered unexpectedly. They were my first words of the afternoon.

'Remember that Negro released on probation who killed his parents? We were *idiots*. What if he'd only *wounded* them?'

'He's right, Tim,' I said.

Dr. Mann didn't deign to interrupt his eating, but Jake shot me a second piercing squint.

'I'll bet,' he went on, 'that two thirds of the patients released from QSH and the other state hospitals are released far too early, that is, when they're still a menace to themselves and society.'

'That's true,' I said.

'I know that the professional opinion in vogue is that hospitalization is at best a necessary evil but it's a stupid vogue. If we've got anything to offer our patients, then our hospitals do too. There are three times as many doctor-hours for a patient as he gets in the best out patient treatment. Read Hegelson, Potter and Busch, their revised edition.'

'And they don't miss appointments, either,' I added.

'That's right,' Jake went on, 'there's no home life to mess up their lives.'

'No wives or husbands or children or home-cooked meals.'

'Yeah.'

Dr. Felloni interrupted: 'Isn't adjustment to the home environment what we're striving for though?'

'Adjustment to *some* environment,' Jake answered. 'I try to get my Negro patients in group therapy to see the sickness of the white world so that they will end their *resentment* and find themselves satisfied with either their lives on the ward or their necessary ghetto existence.'

'And God knows,' I said, 'that the white world is sick. Look at the starving millions in East Germany.'

This slowed Jake down for a moment: he lived the rhythm of agreement but wasn't certain that my statement here was entirely satisfactory. With that brilliance which was his essence, he hedged: 'Our job is to shoot psychological penicillin into the whole social fabric, white and black, and we're doing it.'

'But with regard to Mrs. Lansing,' Dr. Felloni said, 'you do feel *she* should be released.'

'She's your baby, Renata, but remember, "When in doubt, don't let 'em out."'

Dr. Mann sent up a belch as an apparent warning signal that he was about to speak. We all looked at him respectfully.

'Jake,' he said. 'You would have been at home as commander of a concentration camp.'

Silence.

Then I said: 'What a lousy thing to say. Jake wants to help his patients not exterminate them. And besides, in concentration camps the commander sometimes ... didn't give them food.'

Silence. Dr. Mann seemed to be chewing a cud; Dr. Felloni was moving her head from side to side and up and down very slowly, like someone watching a tennis match consisting entirely of lobs. Jake, leaning forward intently and peering without fear into Dr. Mann's bland face, said with the rapidity of a typewriter:

'I don't know what you mean by that, Tim. I'll stack my patient record against yours any day. My policy on patient release is the same as the director's. I think you should apologize.'



'Dessert menu, please, waiter,' said Dr. Mann and seemed to lose interest.

'The same thing as Moreno?' Jake asked.

'No. Moreno has patients act out their fantasies in staged playlets. Drole therapy consists of forcing patients to *live* their suppressed latent impulses.'

'What's the *APB Journal*?' Jake asked.

'Jake, I agree with everything you say,' I said pleadingly. 'Don't challenge me. The whole thin tissue supporting our argument will tear and collapse the whole thing on us.'

'I wasn't urging experimentation on patients.'

'Then what do you do during a typical hour?'

'Cure 'em.'

Dr. Mann began what might have been a long rumbling laugh but was infected by food swallowed the wrong way and ended as a fit of coughing.

'But, Jake,' I said, 'I thought it was our idea to gradually increase the facilities of and enrolment in mental hospitals one percent a year until the whole nation was being cured.'

Silence.

'You'd have to be first, Luke,' Jake said quietly.

'Let me start now, today. I need help, I need food.'

'You mean analysis?'

'Yes. We all know I need it badly.'

'Dr. Mann was your analyst.'

'I've lost faith in him. He's got bad table manners. He wastes food.'

'You knew that before.'

'But I didn't know until now the importance of food.'

Silence. Then Dr. Felloni:

'I'm glad you mentioned Tim's table manners, Luke, because for some time now ...'

'How about it, Tim,' Jake said. 'Can I take on Luke?'

'Certainly. I only work with neurotics.'

That ambiguous remark (was I schizophrenic or mentally healthy?) essentially ended the conversation. A few minutes later I staggered away from the table engaged to begin analysis with Dr. Jacob Ecstein on Friday in our mutual office.

Jake left the table like a man handed the Sonship of God on a silver platter; his greatest triumph was about to begin. And, by Fromm, he was right.

As for myself, when I finally ate again eighteen hours later,



it killed my appetite for therapy, but, as it turned out, going back under analysis with Jake was a stroke of genius. Never question the Way of the Dic. Even when you're starving to death.

## Chapter Seventeen

Eventually, it had to happen: the dice decided that Dr. Rhinehart should spread their plague – he was ordered to corrupt his innocent children into the dicelife.

He easily manœuvred his wife to a long three-day visit to her parents in Daytona Beach, employing the horrible premise that the nursemaid Mrs. Roberts and he would take perfect care of the children. He then manœvered Mrs. Roberts to Radio City Music Hall.

Rubbing his hands together and grinning hysterically, Dr. Rhinehart began to implement his hideous plan of drawing his innocent children into his web of sickness and depravity.

'My children,' he said to them from the living room couch in a fatherly tone of voice (Oh! the cloak which evil wears!) 'I have a special game for us to play today.'

Lawrence and little Evie clustered close to their father like innocent moths to a deadly flame. He took from his pocket and placed on the arm of the couch two dice: those awful seeds which had already born such bitter fruit.

The children stared at the dice wide-eyed; they had never seen evil directly before, but the shimmering green light which the dice emitted sent through each of their hearts a deep convulsive shudder. Suppressing his fear, Lawrence said bravely:

'What's the game, Dad?'

'Me, too,' said Evie.

'It's called the dice man game.'

'What's that?' asked Lawrence. (Only seven years old, yet so soon to be aged in evil.)

'The dice man game goes like this: we write down six things we might do and then we shake a die to see which one we do.'

'Huh?'

'Or write down six persons you might be and then shake the dice and see which one you are.'

Lawrence and Evie stared at their father, stunned with the enormity of the perversion.

'Okay,' said Lawrence.

'Me too,' said Evie.

'How do we decide what to write down?' asked Lawrence.

'Just tell me any strange thing which you think might be fun and I'll write it down.'

Lawrence thought, unaware of the downward spiral this first step might mean.

'Go to the zoo,' he said.

'Go to the zoo,' said Dr. Rhinehart and walked nonchalantly to his desk for paper and pencil to record this infamous game.

'Climb to the roof and throw paper,' Lawrence said. He and Evie had joined their father at the desk and watched as he wrote.

'Go beat up Jerry Brass,' Lawrence went on. Dr. Rhinehart nodded and wrote.

'That's number three,' he said.

'Play horsey with you.'

'Hooray,' said Evie.

'Number four.'

There was a silence.

'I can't think of anymore.'

'How about you, Evie?'

'Eat ice cream.'

'Yeah,' said Lawrence.

'That's number five. Just one more.'

'Go for a long hike in Harlem,' shouted Lawrence, and he ran back to the couch and got the dice. 'Can I throw?'

'You can throw. Just one, remember.'

He cast across the floor of his fate a single die: a four — ran back to the couch and got the dice. 'Can I throw?'

'You can throw. Just one, remember.'

He cast across the floor of his fate a single die: a four — ran back to the couch and got the dice. 'Can I throw?'

'You can throw. Just one, remember.'

He cast across the floor of his fate a single die: a four — ran back to the couch and got the dice. 'Can I throw?'

'You can throw. Just one, remember.'

He cast across the floor of his fate a single die: a four — ran back to the couch and got the dice. 'Can I throw?'

'What do you mean?'

'You've got to beat up Jerry, why not give the dice six choices of what you'll say?'

'That's great. What'll they be?'

'You're God,' his father said with that same horrible smile. 'You name them.'

'I'll tell him my father told me to.'

Dr. Rhinehart coughed, hesitated. 'That's ... um ... number one.'

'I'll tell him my mother told me to.'

'Right.'

'That I'm drunk.'

'Number three.'

'That ... that I can't stand him.'

He was deep in excited concentration.

'That I'm practicing my boxing ...' He laughed and hopped up and down.

'And that the *dice* told me to.'

'That's six and very good, Larry.'

'I throw, I throw.'

'That I'm practicing my boxing ...' He laughed and the living room rung and yelled its command back to his father: 'Three!'

'Okay, Larry, you're drunk. Go get him.'

Reader, Lawrence went. Lawrence struck Jerry Brass. Struck him several times, announced he was drunk and escaped unpunished by the absent Brass parents or present Brass maid, but pursued already by the furies which will not leave unavenged such senseless evil. When he returned to his own apartment, Lawrence's first words were — I record them with shame:

'Where are the dice, Dad?'

Ah, my friends, that innocent afternoon with Larry provoked me into thought in a way my own dice-life until then never had. Larry took to following the dice with such ease and joy compared to the soul-searching gloom that I often went through before following a decision, that I had to wonder what happened to every human in the two decades between seven and twenty-seven to turn a kitten into a cow. Why did children seem to be so often spontaneous, joy-filled and concentrated while adults seemed controlled, anxiety-filled and diffused?

It was the goddam sense of having a self: that sense of self which psychologists have been proclaiming we all must have.



puddles with the other boys, but . . . Joan wanted to chew the penis off her brother every time he won, but . . . And Sylvia daydreamed of a land in which she wouldn't have to worry about how she looked . . .

Patterns are prostitution to the patter of parents. Adults rule and they reward patterns. Patterns it is. And eventual misery.

What if we were to bring up our children differently? Reward them for varying their habits, tastes, roles? Reward them for being inconsistent? What then? We could discipline them to be reliably various, to be conscientiously inconsistent, determinedly habit-free – even of 'good' habits.

'What, my boy, haven't told a lie yet today? Well, go to your room and stay there until you can think one up and learn to do better.'

'Oh, my Johnny, he's so wonderful. Last year he got all "A"s on his report card and this year he's getting mostly "D"s and "F"s. We're so proud.'

'Our little Eileen still pees in her panties every now and then and she's almost twelve.' 'Oh, that's marvellous! Your daughter must be so *alive*.'

'Good boy, Roger, that was beautiful the way you walked off the field and went home to play ping-pong with the score tied and two out in the last of the eighth. Every dad in the stands wished his kid had thought of that.'

'Donnie! Don't you dare brush your teeth again tonight! It's getting to be a regular *habit*.' 'I'm sorry, Mom.'

'Goddam son of mine. Hasn't goofed off in a week. If I don't find the lawn unmowed or the wastebaskets overflowing one of these days, I'm going to blow my top at him.'

'Larry, you ought to be ashamed of yourself. You haven't bullied a single one of the little kids on the block all summer.' 'I just don't feel like it, Mom.' 'Well, at least you could *try*.'

'What should I wear, Mother?' 'Oh I don't know, Sylvia. Why don't you try the cardigan which makes you look flat-chested and that ugly skirt your grandmother gave you which always twists. I've got a pair of nylons I've been saving for a special occasion: they've each got a run.' 'Sounds groovy.'

Teachers, too, would have to alter.

'Your drawings all tend to look like the thing you're drawing, young man. You seem unable to let yourself go.'

'This essay is too logical and well-organized. If you expect to

develop as a writer you must learn to digress and be at times totally irrelevant.'

'Your son's work shows much improvement. His papers on history have become nicely erratic again, and his comment totally unreliable (A-). His math remains a little compulsively accurate, but his spelling is a delight. I particularly enjoyed his spelling of "stuntent" for "student".'

'We regret to inform you that your son behaves always like a man. He seems incapable of being a girl part of the time. He has been dating only girls and may need psychiatric treatment.' 'I'm afraid, George, that you're one of our few ninth graders who hasn't acted like a kindergarten child this week. You'll have to stay after school and work on it.'

The child, we are informed, needs to see order and consistency in the world or he becomes insecure and afraid. But what order and consistency? The child doesn't have to have consistent consistency; it seemed to me he might grow equally well with consistent, dependable inconsistency. Life, in fact, is that way; if parents would only admit and praise inconsistency, children wouldn't be so frightened of their parents' hypocrisy or ignorance.

'Sometimes I'll spank you for spilling your milk and sometimes I won't give a damn.'

'Occasionally I like you when you rebel against me, son, and at other times I love to kick the shit out of you.'

'I'm usually pleased with your good grades in school, but sometimes I think you're an awful grind.'

'Such is the way adults feel. Such is the way children sense it. Why can't they acknowledge and praise their inconsistency? Because they think they have a 'self.'

Like the turtle's shell, the sense of self serves as a shield against stimulation and as a burden which limits mobility into very dangerous areas. The turtle rarely has to think about himself on the other side of his shell; whatever it is, it can't hurt him, can't even touch him. So, too, adults insist on the existence of a consistent self for themselves and their children and hate to be hurt or touched or confused or having to think. If a man lives on consistency, he can afford not to notice people for the first few times. But I imagined a world in which each might be about to play the lover, the benefactor, the attacker, the friend; and once known as one

of those, the next day he might yet be anything. Would we pay attention to this person? Would life be boring? Would life be livable?

I saw then clearly for the first time that the fear of failure keeps us huddled in the cave of self – a group of behavior patterns we have mastered and have no intention of risking failure by abandoning.

What if secretly before every agon or game the dice were thrown to determine whether the 'winner' or the 'loser' 'wins' the prize or the championship, with fifty-fifty being the odds for each? The loser of the game would thus end up half the time being congratulated for having been lucky enough to have lost, and thus won the prize. The man who won the game would be consoled for playing so well.

'But!!! The loser of the game would still feel bad, the winner still feel good.' But I remembered reading in a widely acclaimed book on children's games something which made Larry's affinity for diceliving make sense. I dug out the book and read confirmation of my thoughts with joy. Children, it said:

...rarely trouble to keep scores, little significance is attached to who wins or loses, they do not require the stimulus of prizes, it does not seem to worry them if the game is not finished. Indeed, children like games in which there is a sizable element of luck, so that individual abilities cannot be directly compared. They like games which restart automatically, so that everybody is given a new chance.

It seemed to me that there were two quite different meanings of failure. The mind knows when it is blocked and when it has found a solution. A child trying to solve a maze knows when he fails and when he succeeds; no adult need tell him. A child building a house of blocks knows when the collapse of the house means failure (he wanted to build it higher) and when it means success (he wanted it to fall). Success and failure mean simply the satisfaction and frustration of desire. It is real; it is important; the child doesn't have to be rewarded or punished by society in order to prefer success to failure.

The second meaning of failure is also simple: failure is failure to please an adult; success is pleasing an adult. Money, fame, winning a baseball game, looking pretty, having good clothes, car, house are all types of success which primarily



revolve around pleasing the adult world. There is nothing intrinsic to the human soul in any of these fears of failure.

Becoming the dice man was difficult because it involved a continual risking of failure in the eyes of the adult world. As dice man I 'failed' (in the second sense) again and again. I was rejected by Lil, by the children, by my esteemed colleagues, by my patients, by strangers, by the image of society's values branded into me by thirty years of living. In the second sense of failure I was continually failing and suffering, but in the first sense I never failed. Every time I followed the dictates of the die I was successfully building a house or purposely knocking one down. My mazes were always being solved. I was continually opening myself to new problems and enjoying solving them.

From children to men we cage ourselves in patterns to avoid facing new problems and possible failure; after a while men become bored because there are no new problems. Such is life under the fear of failure.

Fail! Lose! Be bad! Play, risk, dare.

Thus, I exulted that evening of Larry's first diceday. I became determined to make Larry and Evie fearless, frameless, egoless humans. Larry would be the first egoless man since Lao-Tzu. I would let him play the role of father of the household and Evie the mother. I'd let them reverse roles. Sometimes they would play parents as they perceive us to be and at other times as they think parents *should* be. We could all play television heroes and comic-strip characters. And Lil and I - every conscientious parent - would change his personality every other day or week.

'I am he who can play many games.' That is the essence of the happy child of four, and he never feels he loses. 'I am he who is x, y and z, and x, y and z only': that is the essence of the unhappy adult. I would try to extend in my children their childishness. In the immortal words of J. Edgar Hoover: 'Unless ye become as little children, ye shall not see God.'

Larry's first day as diceboy had been cut short by boredom with too much of the same thing. He liked the game; he was able to follow the commands of the dice even when they conflicted with his normal patterns, but after about three hours he simply wanted to play with his trucks and didn't want to risk this pleasure to the dice. Since I have often felt the same way (although not about trucks), I explained that the dice man game should only be played when he felt like it. I emphasized, however, that when he did play he must always follow the dice.

Unfortunately, my efforts during the succeeding two days to turn Larry into Lao-Tzu were confounded by his child's good sense; he gave the dice only extremely pleasant alternatives - ice cream, movies, zoos, horsey, trucks, bikes, money. He began to use the dice as a treasure chest. I finally told him that the dice man game always had to provide risk, that slightly bad choices had to be there too. Surprisingly he agreed. I invented for him that week a dice game which has since become one of our classics: Russian roulette. The initial version of the game for Larry was simple: out of every six alternatives one had to be decidedly unpleasant.

As a result, Larry had some interesting experiences over the next five or six days. (Evie returned to her dolls and to Mrs. Roberts). He took a long hike in Harlem (I told him to keep an eye open for a big muscular white man with candy named Osterflood) and he was arrested as a runaway. It took me forty minutes to convince the 26th Precinct that I had encouraged my seven-year-old son to take a hike in Harlem.

The dice sent him to sneak into the movie *I Am Curious - Yellow*, a film involving a certain amount of naked sexual interplay, and he returned mildly curious and greatly bored. He crawled on all fours from our apartment down four flights of stairs and along Madison Avenue to Walgreen's and ordered an ice-cream sundae. Another time he had to throw away three of his toys, on the other hand the dice ordered him a new racing-car set. He twice had to let me beat him in chess and three times I had to let him beat me. He had a wonderful hour making ostentatiously stupid moves and thus making it difficult for me to lose.



'Who has to do?' She shooed Eyie off to the kitchen and advanced to the edge of the couch, where she lit a cigarette. She'd had a good time in Daytona and we'd enjoyed a nice reunion, but she was beginning to look less tanned and more flushed.

'The player, or players.'

'I don't know what you're talking about.'

'It's simple,' I said (I love these two words: I always imagine Immanuel Kant pronouncing them before he set down the first sentence of *The Critique of Pure Reason*, or an American President before launching into an explanation of Vietnam War policy). 'To encourage Larry to branch out into new areas of his young -'

'Stealing!'

'- new areas of his young life, I invented a game whereby you make up things to do -'

'But stealing, Luke, I mean -'

'Which the dice then choose from among.'

'And stealing was one of the options.'

'It's all in the family,' I said.

She stared at me from near the edge of the couch, her arms folded across her chest, a cigarette between her fingers. She looked amazingly calm.

'Luke,' she began speaking slowly. 'I don't know what you think you're doing lately; I don't know whether you're sane or insane; I don't know if you're trying to destroy me or trying to destroy your children or trying to destroy yourself, but if you - if you - once more involve Larry in any of your sick games - I - I'll ...'

Her amazingly calm face suddenly split like a broken mirror, into dozens of cracks of tension, her eyes filled with tears and she twisted her face to the side and gasped a suppressed scream.

'Don't. Please don't,' she whispered, and she sat abruptly on the arm of the couch, her face still averted. 'Go tell him no more games. Never.'

I stood up, the *Times* fluttering to the floor.

'I'm sorry, Lil. I didn't realize -'

'Never - Larry - more games.'

'I'll tell him.'

I left the room and went to his bedroom and told him, and his career as diceboy, after only eight days, ended.

Until the Die resurrected it.

## Chapter Nineteen

My childhood! My childhood! My God, I've now written over a hundred and ten pages and you don't even know whether I was bottle fed or breast fed! You don't know when I was first weaned and how; when I first discovered that girls don't have any weeny, how much I brooded because girls don't have any weeny, when I first decided to enjoy the fact that girls don't have any weeny. You don't know who my great-grandparents were, my grandparents; you don't even know about my mother and father! My siblings! My milieu! My socio-economic background! My early traumas! My early joys! The signs and portents surrounding my birth! Dear friends, you don't know any of that 'David Copperfield kind of crap' (to quote Howard Hughes) which is the very essence of autobiography!

Relax, my friends, I don't intend to tell you.

Traditional autobiographers wish to help you understand how the adult was 'formed.' I suppose most human beings, like clay chamber pots, are 'formed' - and are used accordingly. But I? I am born anew at each green fall of the die, and by die-ing I eliminate my since. The past - paste, pus, piss - is all only illusory events created by a stone mask to justify an illusory stagnant present. Living flows, and the only possible justification of an autobiography is that it happened by chance to be written - like this one. Someday a higher creature will write the almost perfect and totally honest autobiography:

'I live.'

I will acknowledge, however, that I did, in fact, *have* a human mother. This much I admit.

In November I received a telephone call from Dr. Mann informing me that Eric Cannon had been acting up while I'd been away a week at a convention in Houston, that it had been necessary to increase his medication (tranquilizers) and would I please make a special trip over as soon as possible and see him. Eric might have to be transferred to another institution. In my temporary office on the Island I read through Head Nurse Herbie Flamm's report on Eric Cannon. It had a kind of novelistic power that Henry James sought for fifty years without finding:

It is necessary to report that Patient Eric Cannon is a trouble maker. There haven't been many patients in my lifetime that I would have to label that, but this is one. Cannon is a consciously evil trouble maker. He is disturbing the other patients. Although I have always kept this one of the quietest [sic] wards on the island, since he has been here it's noisy and a mess. Patients who haven't said a word in years now can't shut up. Patients that have stood always in the same corner now play pitch and catch with chairs. Many of the patients are now singing and laughing. This disturbs the patients who want peace and quiet to get better. Someone keeps destroying the television set. I think Mr. Cannon is schizophrenic. Sometimes he wanders around the ward nice and quiet like he was in a dreamworld and other times he sneaks around like a snake, hissing at me and the patients like he was the boss of the ward and not me.

Unfortunately he has followers. Many patients are now refusing sedation. Some do not go to the machine shop for factory therapy. Two patients confined to wheelchairs have pretended to walk. Patients are showing disrespect for the hospital food. When one man was ill to his stomach, another patient began eating the vomit, claiming it tasted much better that way. We do not have enough maximum security rooms on the ward. Also patients who are refusing or not swallowing their sedation will not stop singing and laughing when we politely ask. Disrespect is everywhere. I have sometimes had the feeling on the ward

that I do not exist. I mean to say no one pays attention anymore. My attendants are often tempted to treat the patients with physical force but I remind them of the Hypocritic Oath. Patients will not stay in their beds at night. Talking with each other is going on. Meetings I think. They whisper. I do not know if there is a rule against this, but I recommend that a rule is made. Whispering is worse than singing.

We have sent several of his followers to ward W [the violent ward] but patient Cannon is tricky. He never does any thing himself. I think he is spreading illegal drugs on the ward but none have been found. He never does anything and everything is happening.

I have this to report. It is serious. On September 10, at 2.30 p.m. in the Main Room right in front of the destroyed and lifeless television set, a large group of patients began hugging each other. They had a circle with their arms around each other and they were humming or moaning and kept getting closer and humming and swaying or pulsating like a giant jellyfish or human heart and they were all men. They did this and attendant R. Smith attempted to break them up but their circle was very strong. I attempted to break their circle also as gently as I could but as I was so endeavoring the circle suddenly opened and two men physically clamped me with their arms and hands and I was drawn against my total will into the horrible rele. It was disgusting beyond my ability to say.

The patients showed no respect but continued their illegal hugging until four attendants from ward T plus R. Smith rescued me by breaking up the circle as gently as they could, unfortunately accidentally breaking my arm (the lower tibia minor, I believe).

This event is typical of the poor conditions which have developed on our ward since patient Cannon came. He was in the circle but since there were eight, Dr. Vener did we couldn't send them all to ward W. Hugging is also not technically against the rules which again shows the need for more thinking.

The boy never talks to me. But I hear. Among the patients I have friends. They say he is against mental hospitals. You should know that. They say he is the ring-leader of all the trouble. That he is trying to make all the patients happy and not pay attention to us. They say he

says that patients ought to take over the hospital. That he says even if he leaves them he will come back. These patients, my friends, say this.

Because of the facts what I have written I must respectfully recommend to you:

(1) that all sedation be given by needle to prevent patients from falsely swallowing their tranquilizers and remaining active and noisy during the day.

(2) that all illegal drugs should be strictly forbidden.

(3) that *strict rules* be developed and enforced regarding singing, laughing, whispering, and hugging.

(4) that a special iron mesh cage be developed to protect the television set and that its cord go directly from the set which is ten feet off the floor to the ceiling to protect the wire from those who would deny the television set to those who want to watch it. This is freedom of speech. The iron mesh must form about inch wide squares, thick enough to prevent flying objects from entering and smashing the screen but letting people still see the TV screen although with a waffle-griddle effect. *The TV must go on.*

(5) *Most important.* That patient Eric Cannon be transferred respectfully someplace else.

Head Nurse Flamm sent this report to myself, Dr. Vener, Dr. Mann, Chief Supervisor Hennings, State Mental Hospital Director Alfred Coles, Mayor John Lindsay and Governor Nelson Rockefeller.

I had seen Eric only three times since my Jesus session with him and he had been extremely tense each time and done very little talking, but when he walked into my office that afternoon he came as quietly as a lamb into a grassy meadow.

He moved to the window and stared out. He was wearing blue jeans, a rather soiled T-shirt, sneakers and a gray hospital shirt, unbuttoned. His hair was quite long, but his skin was paler than it had been in September. After about a minute he turned and lay down on the short couch to the left of the desk.

'Mr. Flamm,' I said, 'reports that he believes that you are stirring up the patients to - improper behavior.'

To my surprise he answered right away.

'Yeah, improper. Bad. Lousy. That's me,' he said, staring at the green ceiling. 'It took me a long time to realize what



the bastards are up to, to realize that the good-game is their most effective method of keeping their fucking system going. When I did, it made me rage against the way I'd been fooled. All my kindness and forgiveness and meekness just let the system step on everybody all the more comfortably. Love is groovy if it's for good guys but to love the fuzz, love the army, love Nixon, love the church, whoa man, that is one lost trip.'

While he was speaking I took out my pipe and began filling it with marijuana. When he finally paused I said:

'Dr. Mann indicates that if Flamm continues to complain you'll have to be transferred to Ward W.'

'Oh, boohoo!oo,' he said, not looking at me. 'It's all the same. It's a system, you see. A machine. You work hard to keep the machine going, you're a good guy; you goof off or try to stop the machine and you're a commie or a loony. The machine may be blowing blacks under like weeds, or scattering ten-ton bombs over Vietnam like firecrackers or overthrowing reform governments in Latin America every other month, but the old machine *must be kept working*. Oh man, when I saw this I vomited for a week. Locked myself in my room for six months.'

He paused and we both listened to the birds singing away among the maple trees outside the building. I lit the pipe and took a deep toke. I exhaled, the smoke drifting idly in his direction.

'And all that time I began slowly to feel that something important was going to happen to me, that I was chosen for some special mission. I had only to fast and to wait. When I hopped my father in the face and was sent here I knew even more certainly that something was going to happen. *Knew it*.'

He stopped talking and sniffed twice. I took another drag on my pipe.

'Has anything happened yet?' I asked.

He watched me take another lungful and then settled back onto the couch. He reached into his hair and brought out a home made joint.

'Got a match?' he said.

'If you're going to smoke, share mine,' I said.

He leaned over to take the pipe, but it was out, so I handed him the matches too. He lit up and for the next three minutes we passed the pipe back and forth in silence. He was staring at the ceiling as if its green cracks contained like the back of a turtle's shell, portents of the future. By the time the pipe went

out a second time, I was pleasantly high. I felt happy, as if I were embarking on a new voyage that for the first time, even in my dice man life, represented real, rather than superficial change.

My eyes were focused on his face, which, under the influence of his high perhaps, was glowing. He smiled with a peacefulness well within my understanding. His hands were folded across his belly, and he lay like a dead man, but glowing, glowing. His voice when he spoke was slow, thick and gentle, as if it came from way off in the clouds.

'About three weeks ago I got up in the middle of the night when all the attendants were asleep to take a piss, but I didn't have to take a piss. I was drawn into the day room as if by a magnet and there I stared out through the window at the Manhattan skyline. Manhattan: the central cog of the machine, or maybe just the sewage system. I knelt and I prayed. Yeah, I prayed. To the Spirit which had lifted Christ above the mass of men to bring His Spirit to me, to give to me the light that could light the world. To let me become the way, the truth and the light. Yeah.'

He paused and I emptied the ashes out into an ashtray and began refilling the pipe.

'How long I prayed, I can't tell. Suddenly, *wham!* I was flooded by a light that made an acid trip seem like sniffing glue. I couldn't see. My body seemed to swell, my spirit swelled, I seemed to expand until I filled the whole universe. The world was me.'

He paused briefly, the sound of the Jefferson Airplane coming from someplace up the hall.

'I hadn't smoked a thing for three days. I wasn't loony. I filled the whole universe.'

He paused again.

'I was crying. I was weeping for joy. I was on my feet I guess, and the whole world was all light and was all me and it was good. I stood with my arms outstretched to embrace everything and then I was conscious of this terrific mad grin I had on my face and the vision kind of faded and I shrunk back to me. But I felt that, I knew that I had been given a job ... a role, a mission ... yeah. This gray-green hellhouse couldn't be left standing. The gray factories, the gray offices, the gray buildings, the gray people ... everything without light ... has to go. I saw it. I see it. What I'd been waiting for had happened. The Spirit I'd been looking for, I ... had ... I

know I'm not for all men. The mass of men will always see and live in the gray world. But a few will follow me, a few, and we'll change the world.'

I passed him the relit pipe when he'd finished talking and he took it and inhaled and passed it back to me. He didn't look at me.

'And you, what's your game?' he said. 'You're not smoking pot with me just because you feel like smoking pot.'

'No,' I said.

'Then why?'

'Just chance.'

He stared at the green ceiling until I passed him back the pipe. When he finally exhaled he said again as if from very far away: 'If you want to follow me you must give up everything.'

'I know.'

'Pot-smoking doctors who get stoned with mental patients don't stay doctors long.'

'I know,' I felt like giggling.

'Wives and brothers and fathers and mothers don't usually like my way.'

'So I gather.'

'Someday you will help me.'

We were both staring at the ceiling now, the hot bowl of the pipe resting unused in the palm of my hand.

'Yes,' I said

'It's a marvelous game we'll play - the best,' he said.

'For some reason I feel I'm yours,' I said. 'Whatever you want me to do, I'll want to do.'

'Everything will happen.'

'Yes.'

'The blind bastards [his voice was quiet and serene and remote] will panic and kill, panic and kill, trying to control the uncontrollable, trying to kill what can only live.'

'We will panic and kill.'

'And I'll,' he interrupted himself with a chuckle, 'I'll try to save the whole fucking world -'

'Yes.'

'I'm Divine, you know,' he said.

'Yes,' I said, believing it.

'I've come to wake the world to evil, to goose mankind to good.'

'We'll hate you -'

'To slash the mash-potato minds until their sin is seen.'

'We'll be blind -'

'Try to make the blind see, the lame walk, the dead live again.' He laughed.

'And we'll try to make the seeing blind, the walking lame, the living dead.' I smiled.

'I'll be the insane Saviour of the world, and you'll kill me.'

'Whatever you want will be done.' I eased out a slow motion bubbling of mirth.

'I'll be ...' He was chuckling too, in slow motion. 'I'll be ... the Saviour ... of the world ... and do nothing, and you ...'ll kill ... me.'

'And I ...' Goddam it, it was funny! How beautiful it was: '... I'll kill you.'

The room was a beautiful blur bouncing up and down on the bubbles of our laughter. Tears were in my eyes and I took off my glasses and put my face in my folded arms and laughed, my big body rumbling from cheeks to belly to knees, laughing, tears wetting my jacket, the soft cotton material caressing my wet face like bear's bristle, and crying with an ecstasy that I hadn't known before that moment, and looking up because I couldn't believe I was crying and Eric's face blurred, blurred bright but blurred and I looked for my glasses - such terror that I might never see again - and after groping for forty days I found them and put them on and looked at the blurred brightness and it was Eric's holy face flowing tears like mine and he wasn't laughing.

## Chapter Twenty-one

*[Being an edited tape from one of the early analytic sessions given by Dr. Jacob Ecstein to Dr. Lucius Rhinehart, neurotic. We are cutting into the tape about halfway through the analytic hour. The first voice is that of Dr. Rhinehart.]*

- I'm not sure why I entered into this affair but I think it may partially be aggression against the husband.

- How have your relations with Lillian been?

- Fine. Or rather, about as usual, which means up and down but essentially happy. I don't think it was or is aggression against Lil. At least I don't think it is.

- But against the husband.

- Yes. I won't use names or go into details because you know the people involved, but I find the husband too ambitious and conceited. I experience him as a rival.

- You don't need to hide the names. You know it would make no difference outside this office how I treated them.

- Well, maybe. I suppose you're right, but I don't think the names should be necessary if I can present everything else honestly.

- The details.

- Yes. Although I suppose you will know then immediately the people I'm talking about. But still, I'll omit the names.

- How did the affair start?

- I followed . . . a whim one night and went to her place, found her alone, and raped her.

- Raped her?

- Well, there was a good deal of cooperation. Actually, she enjoyed it more than I did. But the original idea was mine.

- Mmm.

- We've been seeing each other off and on now for about half a year.

- Mmmm.

- I go to her place when her husband's away, or occasionally we meet in a room I rent in a Puerto Rican neighborhood.

- Ahhh.

- Sexually it's been rewarding. The woman seems totally without inhibitions. I've tried just about everything my ima-

gination can cook up and she seems to have more recipes than me.

- I see.

- The husband doesn't seem to suspect a thing.

- He doesn't suspect a thing.

- No. He seems completely wrapped up in his work. His wife says he pulls off a quick one about once every two weeks but with about as much passion or pleasure as when making an extended bowel movement.

- Mmmm.

- I once finished an orgasm in her while she was handing a towel in to her husband in the bathtub.

- You what?

- I was pumping away from behind while she leaned into the bathroom and talked to her husband and handed him a towel.

- Look here, Rhinehart, do you know what you're saying?

- I thought I did.

- How could you ... How could you possibly ...

- What's the matter?

- How could you possibly miss the significance of this affair?

- I don't know. It seems just ...

- Free associate.

- What?

- I'll feed you words and you free associate.

- Oh, okay.

- Black.

- White.

- Moon.

- Sun.

- Father.

- Mother.

- Water.

- Ah ... bathtub.

- Road.

- Roadway.

- Green.

- Yellow.

- Fucking from rear.

- Ar ... ah ... ah ... artificial.

- Artificial?

- Artificial.

- How so?



water with bathtub. Ergo: Big Father Chief was in the bathtub.

- Wow.

- Finally, although these are but trivial confirmations of what now is obvious to you, you associate with 'thirst', 'water.' You thirst not for women but for water, for bathtub, for your father. At the end, the free association seems to break down as you associate both your mother and father with women, but in fact it is further confirmation of the whole significance of your extramarital affair and of this free association your incestuous, homosexual love for your father.

- That's incredible. That's absolutely ... wham ... [Long pause] ... But what ... what does it all mean?

- How so? I've told you.

- I mean ... what should I do about it?

Ah so. Details. Your urge for this woman will probably evaporate now that you know the truth.

- My father died when I was two.

- Precisely. I need say no more.

- He was six foot and blond. The husband is five feet eight and dark.

- Displacement.

- My father never took baths, only showers, or so my mother tells me.

Irrelevant.

- When a woman is handing a towel in to her husband and chatting with him, it's inconvenient to penetrate her from the front.

- Nonsense.

- I didn't know Tahoe meant Big Father Chief.

- Repression.

- I think I'm still going to enjoy making love to this woman.

- I challenge you to examine your fantasies when you do.

- I usually fantasize I'm doing it with my wife.

- The hour's up.



Days pass, Reader. So do weeks. Since I have a poor memory and kept no journal during these now-to-be-recorded days, the precise sequence of events is no clearer in my mind than it is in these pages. The dice didn't order me to write my autobiography until almost three years after my discovery, and the historic value of everything I did was not apparent to me at the time.

On the other hand, my selective defective memory presumably is hitting only the high points. Perhaps it is giving to my random life a pattern which total recall would blur. Let us assume, then, that what I forget is on a priori grounds insignificant, and what I remember is, in the same way, of great moment. It may not seem that way to either of us, but it makes a convenient theory of autobiography. Also, if the transitions from chapter to chapter or scene to scene seem particularly illogical, attribute it to either my arbitrary memory or the random fall of a die - it makes the trip more psychedelic.

In the evolution of the totally random man the next event worth noting is that on January 2, 1969 at 1 A.M. I determined to begin the new year (I'm a slow starter) by letting the dice determine my long-term fate.

I wrote with unfirm hand and dazed eyes the first option, for snake-eyes or double sixes: I would leave my wife and children and begin a separate life. I trembled (which is hard for a man with so much meat on him) and felt proud. Sooner or later the dice would roll a two or a twelve and the last great test of the dice's ability to destroy the self would occur. If I left I'd there would be no turning back; it would be dice unto death.

But then I felt fatigued. The dice man seemed boring, unattractive, *other*. It seemed like too much work. Why not relax and enjoy everyday life, play around in minor ways with the dice as I had at the beginning, and forgo this senseless, theatrical challenge of killing the self? I had discovered an interesting tonic, more varied than alcohol, less dangerous than LSD, more challenging than stocks or sex. Why not accept it as tonic rather than try to make it a magic potion? I had but one life to lead, why sacrifice it to becoming locked in

the cage of a rolling cube? For the first time in the six months since becoming the dice man, the thought of totally giving up the dice appealed to me.

I wrote as the option for a 6, 7, or 8 that I return to a normal diceless life for six months. I felt pleased.

But immediately thereafter, my friends, I felt frightened, depressed. The realization that I might be without the dice produced precisely the same heavy depression which the thought of being without Lil had produced. Erasing the 7 as a possibility for the option of giving up the dice, I felt a little better. I tore up the entire page and dropped it in the waste basket: I would abandon the whole conception of long-range dice decisions. I heaved myself up out of my chair and walked slowly off to the bathroom where I brushed my teeth and washed my face. I stared at myself in the mirror.

Clark Kent stared back at me, clean-cut and mediocre. Removing my glasses helped, primarily because it blurred the image sufficiently so that my imagination was given leeway. The blurred face was at first eyeless and mouthless; a faceless nobody. By concentrating I conjured up two gray slits and a toothless mouth; a death's head. With my glasses back on it was just me again. Luke Rhinehart, M.D., the Clark Kent of New York psychoanalysis. But where was Superman? Indeed, that was what this water-closet identity crisis was all about. Where indeed was Superman if I went back to bed?

Back at my desk I rewrote the first two options; leaving Lil and giving up the dice. I then gave one chance in five to the option that I decide at the beginning of each of the next seven months (until the birthday of D-day in mid-August) what each particular month was to be devoted to. I gave the same probability to the option that I try to write a novel for seven months. Slightly better odds went to the option that I spend three months touring Europe and the rest of the time traveling at the whim of the die. My last option was to turn my sex research with Dr. Felloni over to the imagination of the dice.

The first bi-annual fate-dealing day had arrived - a momentous occasion. I blessed the dice in the name of Nietzsche, Freud, Jake Ecstein and Norman Vincent Peale and shook them in the bowl of my hands, rattling them hard against my palms. I gurgled with anticipation: the next half-year of my life, perhaps even more, trembled in my hands. The dice tumbled across the desk; there was a six and there was a ... three.

Nine - survival, anticlimax, inconclusion, even disappointment; the dice had ordered me to decide anew each month what my special fate was to be.

National Habit-Breaking Month must have been dictated by the die in a fit of pique over my easy enjoyment of my dice-life; the month provided a hundred little blasts toward the breaking up of Lucius Rhinehart, M.D. Habit breaking had won out over (1) dedicated-psychiatrist month, (2) begin-writing-a-novel month, (3) vacation-in-Italy month, (4) be-kind-to-everybody month, and (5) help-Arturo-X month. The command was, to be precise, 'I will attempt at every moment of every day of this month to alter my habitual behavior patterns.'

First of all it meant that when I rolled over to cuddle Lil at dawn I had to roll back again and stare at the wall. After staring a few minutes and then beginning to doze off, I realized that I never rose at dawn, so with effort and resentment, I got out of bed. Both feet were in my slippers and I was plodding toward the bathroom before I realized habit had me in his fist. I kicked off my slippers and plodded, then jogged into the living room. I still, however, felt like urinating. Triumphantly, I did so in a vase of artificial gladioli. (Three days later Dr. Felloni remarked on how well they seemed to be doing.) A few minutes later I woke up in the same standing position, conscious that I still had a silly proud smile on my face. Careful examination of my conscience revealed that I did not make a habit of falling asleep on my feet after urinating in the living room so I let myself doze off again.

'What are you doing?' a voice said through my sleep.

'Huh?'

'Luke, what are you doing?'

'Oh.' I saw Lil standing nude with her arms folded across her chest looking at me.

'I'm thinking.'

'What about?'

'Dinosaurs.'

'Come back to bed.'

'All right.'

I started to follow her back to bed but remembered that following nude women into beds was habitual. When Lil had plopped in and pulled the blankets over her I crawled under the bed.

'Luke???'

I didn't answer.

The squeak of springs and the wandering low-cloud ceiling above me implied that Lil was leaning over first on one and then on the other side of the bed. The spread was lifted and her upside-down face peered into my sideways face. We looked at each other for thirty seconds. Without a word her face disappeared and the bed above me became still.

'I want you,' I said. 'I want to make love to you.' (The prosaicness of the prose was compensated for by the poetry of my position.)

When the silence continued I felt an admiration for Lil. Any normal, mediocre woman would have (a) sworn, (b) looked under the bed again, or (c) shouted at me. Only a woman of high intelligence and deep sensitivity would have remained silent.

'I'd love to have your prick inside me,' her voice suddenly said.

I was frightened: a contest of wills. I must not reply habitually.

'I want your left knee,' I said.

Silence.

'I want to come between your toes,' I went on.

'I want to feel your Adam's apple bob up and down,' she said.

Silence.

I began humming 'The Battle Hymn of the Republic.' I lifted the springs above me with all my might. She rolled off to one side. I changed my position to try to push her off. She rolled back into the middle. My arms were exhausted. Although whatever I did from under the bed was, a priori, a nonhabitual act, my back was aching. I got out from under, stood up and stretched

'I don't like your games, Luke,' Lil said quietly.

'The Pittsburgh Pirates have won three games in a row but remain mired in third place.'

'Please come to bed and be yourself.'

'Which one?'

'Any one except this morning's version.'

Habit pulled me toward the bed, the dice pulled back.

'I have to think about dinosaurs,' I said and, realizing I'd said it in my normal voice, I repeated it shouting. When I saw that I had used my habitual shout I started to emit a third

version, but realized that three of anything approached habit and so half-shouted, half-mumbled, 'Breakfast with dinosaurs in bed,' and went into the kitchen.

Halfway there I tried to vary my walk and ended up crawling the last fifteen feet.

'What are you doing, Daddy?'

Larry stood sleepy-eyed but fascinated in the entrance to the kitchen. I didn't want to upset him. I had to watch my words carefully.

'I'm looking for mice.'

'Oh boy, can I look?'

'No, they're dangerous.'

'Mice?'

'These mice are man-eaters.'

'Oh Daddy . . . [Scornfully].'

'I'm teasing [An habitual phrase; I shook my head].'

'Go back to be - [Another! ]'

'Look under your mother's bed, I think they may have gone under there.'

Not a great many seconds later Larry came back from our bedroom accompanied by a bathrobed Lil. I was on my knees at the stove about to heat a pot of water.

'Don't you involve the children in your games.'

Since I never lose my temper at Lil I lost it.

'Shut your mouth! You'll scare them all away.'

'Don't you say shut up to me!'

'One more word out of you and I'll ram a dinosaur down your throat.' I stood up and strode toward her, fists clenched.

They both looked terrified. I was impressed.

'Go back to bed, Larry,' Lil said, shielding him and backing away.

'Get down on your knees and pray for mercy, Lawrence, NOW!'

Larry ran for his bedroom, crying.

'Fie upon you!'

'Don't you dare hit me.'

'My God, you're insane,' Lil said.

I hit her, rather restrainedly, on the left shoulder.

She hit me, rather unrestrainedly, in the left eye.

I sat down on the kitchen floor.

'For breakfast is what?' I asked, at least reversing the syntax.

'Are you through?'

'I surrender everything.'

'Come back to bed.'

'Except my honor.'

'You can keep your honor in your underwear, but come back to bed and behave.'

I jogged back to bed ahead of Lil and lay as rigid as a board for forty minutes at which point Lil commanded me to get out of bed. Immediately and rigidly I obeyed. I stood like a robot beside the bed.

'Relax,' she commanded irritably from the dresser.

I collapsed to the floor, ending as painlessly as possible on my side and back. Lil came over and looked down at me for a moment and then kicked me in the thigh. 'Act normal,' she said.

I rose, did six squats arms extended and went to the kitchen. For breakfast I had a hot dog, two pieces of uncooked carrot, coffee with lemon and maple syrup, and toast cooked twice until it was blackened with peanut butter and radish. Lil was furious; primarily because both Larry and Evie wanted desperately to have for breakfast what I was having and ended up crying in frustration Lil too.

I jogged down Fifth Avenue from my apartment to my office, attracting considerable attention since I was (1) jogging (2) gasping like a fish drowning in air; and (3) dressed in a tuxedo over a red T-shirt with large white letters declaring the Big Red.

At the office Miss Reingold greeted me formally, neutrally and, I must admit, with secretarial aplomb. Her cold, ugly efficiency stimulated me to break new ground in our relationship.

'Mary Jane, baby,' I said. 'I've got a surprise this morning. I've decided to fire you.'

Her mouth neatly opened, revealing two precisely parallel rows of crooked teeth.

'I'll be back tomorrow morning.'

'But Dr Rhinehart, I don't understand -'

'Simple, kneeknocker. I've been hornier in the last few weeks than I have in the last ten years. I want a receptionist who's a good lay.'

Rhinehart -'

'I'm efficient, but you've got a flat ass. Hired a 38-24-37 receptionist who knows all about fellatio, post hoc propter id, soixante-trois, and proper filing procedures.'

She was backing slowly towards Dr. Ecstein's office, eyes bulging, teeth gleaming like two parallel armies in disarray.

'She starts tomorrow morning,' I went on. 'Has her own contraceptive device, I understand. You'll get full pay through the end of the century. Good-bye and good luck.'

I had begun jogging in place about halfway through my tirade and at its conclusion I sprinted neatly into my office. Miss Reingold was last seen sprinting not so neatly into Jake's.

I assumed the traditional lotus position on my desk and wondered what Miss Reingold would do with my chaotic cruelties. After minimal investigation I concluded that she had been given something to fill her dull life. I pictured her years hence with two dozen nieces and nephews clustered around her chubby knees telling them about the wicked doctor who stuck pins in patients and raped others and, under the influence of LSD and imported Scotch, fired good, hard-working people and replaced them with raving nymphomaniacs.

Feeling superior in my imaginative faculties and uncomfortable in my yoga position I stretched both arms upward. A knock on the door.

'Yol' I answered, arms still outstretched, my tuxedo straining grotesquely. Jake stuck his head in.

'Say, Luke, baby, Miss Reingold was telling me som -' He saw me. Jake's habitual piercing squint couldn't quite negotiate the sight: he blinked twice.

'What's up, Luke?' he asked tentatively.

I laughed. 'Oh this,' I said, fingering the tuxedo. 'Late party last night. I'm trying to wake myself up before Osterflood comes. Hope I didn't upset Miss R.'

He hesitated, his chubby neck and round face still the only parts of him which had eased their way into the room.

'Well,' he said, 'yeah. She says you fired her.'

'Nonsense,' I replied. 'I was telling her a joke I heard at the party last night; it was a little raunchy perhaps, but nothing that would upset Mary Magdalen.'

'Yeah,' he said, his traditional squint gathering strength, his glasses like two flying saucers with slits concealing deadly ray guns. 'Righto,' he said. 'Sorry to bother you.'

His face vanished, the door eased shut. While meditating I was interrupted a few minutes later by the door opening and Jake's glasses reappearing.

'She wants me to make sure she's not fired.'

'Tell her to come to work tomorrow fully prepared.'



'Righto.'

When Osterflood strode in I was limping around the room trying to get the circulation back into my feet. He walked automatically to the couch but I stopped him.

'No you don't, Mr. O. Today you sit over there and I'll use the couch.'

I made myself comfortable while he lumbered uncertainly to the chair behind my desk.

'What's the matter, Dr. Rhinehart, do you -'

'I feel elated today,' I began, noting in the corner of the ceiling an impressive cobweb. For how many years had my patients been staring at that? 'I feel I've made a major breakthrough on the road to the New Man.'

'What new man?'

'The Random Man. The unpredictable man. I feel today I am demonstrating that habits can be broken. That man is free.'

'I wish I could break my habit of raping little girls,' he said, trying to get the focus back on himself.

'There's hope, O., there's hope. Just do the opposite of everything you normally do. If you feel like raping them, shower them with candy and kindness and then leave. If you feel like beating a whore, have her beat you. If you feel like seeing me, go to a movie instead.'

'But that's not easy. I like hurting people.'

'True, but you may find you'll get a kick out of kindness, too. Today, for example, I found running to work much more meaningful than my usual cab ride. I also found my cruelty to Miss Reingold refreshing. I used to enjoy being nice to her.'

'I wondered why she was crying. What happened?'

'I accused her of bad breath and body odor.'

'Jesus.'

'Yes.'

'That was a horrible thing to do. I'd never do a thing like that.'

'I hope not. But the city health authorities had issued a formal complaint that the entire building was beginning to stink. I had no choice.'

In the ensuing silence I heard his chair squeak; he may have tipped back in it, but from where I lay I couldn't tell. I could see only part of two walls, bookcases, books, my cobweb, and a single small portrait of Socrates draining the hemlock. My taste in soothing pictures for patients seemed dubious.

'I've been pretty cheerful lately too,' Osterflood said negatively, and I realized I wanted to get the focus back on problems.

'Of course, habit breaking can also be a chore,' I said. 'For example, I find it difficult to improvise new methods and places for urinating.'

'I think ... I almost think you may have brought me toward a breakthrough,' Osterflood said, ignoring me.

'I'm particularly concerned with my next bowel movement,' I went on. 'There seem to me definite limits as to what society will stand for. All sorts of eccentricity and nonsensical horrors can be permitted - wars, murder, marriage, slums - but that bowel movements should be made anywhere except in the toilet seems to be pretty universally considered despicable.'

'You know that if ... I felt that if I could just kick my little-girl addiction, just ... lose interest, I'd be all right. The big ones don't mind, or can be bought.'

'Also locomotion. There are only a certain number of limited ways of moving from spot A to spot B. Tomorrow, for example, I won't feel free to jog to work. What can I do? Walk backward?' I looked over to Osterflood with a serious frown, but he was immersed in his own thoughts.

'But now ... lately ... I got to admit it ... I seem to be losing my interest in little girls.'

'Walking backward's a solution, of course, but only a temporary one. After that and crawling and running backward and hopping on one foot, I'll feel confined, limited, repetitious, a robot.'

'And that's good, I know it is. I mean I *hate* little girls and now that I'm less interested in fucking them I feel that's ... definitely an advance.' He looked down at me sincerely and I looked sincerely back.

'Conversations too are a problem,' I said. 'Our syntax is habitual, our diction, our coherence. I have a habit of logical thought which clearly must be broken. And vocabulary. Why do I accept the limits of our habitual words. I'm a clod! A clod!'

'But ... but ... lately ... I'm afraid ... I've sensed ... I'm almost afraid to say it ...'

'Umpwillis. Art fodder. Wishmonger. Gladsull. Partminkson. Jombie. Blit. Why not? Man has limited himself artificially to the past. I feel myself breaking free.'

'...that I'm, I feel I'm beginning to want, to like ... little boys.'

'A breakthrough. A definite breakthrough if I can continue to contradict my habitual patterns as I have this morning. And sex. Sexual patterns must be broken too.'

'I mean really *like* them,' he said emphatically. 'Not want to rape them or hurt them or anything like that, just bugger them and have them suck me off.'

'Possibly this experiment could get me into dangerous ground. I suppose since I've habitually not been interested in raping little girls that theoretically I ought to try it.'

'And boys ... little boys are easier to get at. They're more trusting, less suspicious.'

'But really hurting someone frightens me. I suppose - No! It is a limitation. A limitation I must overcome. To be free from habitual inhibitions I will have to rape and kill.'

His chair squeaked, and I heard one of his feet hit the ground.

'No,' he said firmly. 'No, Dr. Rhinehart. I'm trying to tell you, raping and killing aren't necessary anymore. Even hitting may be out.'

'Raping, or at least killing, is absolutely necessary to the Random Man. To shirk that would be to shirk a clear duty.'

'Boys, little boys, even teen-age boys, will do just as good, I'm *sure*. It's dangerous with little girls, Doc. I warn you.'

'Danger is necessary. The whole concept of the Random Man is the most dangerous and revolutionary ever conceived by man. If total victory demands blood then blood it must be.'

'No, Dr. Rhinehart, no. You must find another way to work it out. A less dangerous way. These are human beings you're talking about.'

'Only according to our habitual perceptive patterns. It may well be that little girls are actually fiends from another world sent to destroy us.'

He didn't reply but I heard the chair give one small squeak.

'It's quite clear,' I went on, 'that without little girls we wouldn't have women, and women - snorfu bock clisting rinn-schauer.'

'No, no, Doc, you're tempting me. I know it, I see it now. Women *are* human beings, they must be.'

'Call them what you will, they differ from us, Osterflood, and you can't deny it.'

'I know, I know, and boys don't. Boys are us. Boys are good. I think I could learn to love boys and not to have to worry so much about the police anymore.'

'Candy and kindness to girls, O., and a stiff prick to boys: you may be right. It would, for you, definitely be a habit breaker.'

'Yes, yes.'

Someone knocked on the door. The hour was up. As I dazedly rolled my feet onto the floor I felt Mr. Osterflood pumping my hand vigorously: *his eyes were blazing with joy.*

'This has been the greatest therapeutic hour of my life. You're ... you're ... you're a *boy*, Dr. Rhinehart, a genuine boy.'

'Thank you, O. I hope you're right.'

Slowly and steadily, my friends, I was beginning to go insane. I found that my residual self was changing. When I chose to let the sleeping dice lie and be my 'natural self' I discovered that I liked absurd comments, anecdotes, actions. I climbed trees in Central Park, assumed the yoga position of meditation during a cocktail party and oozed esoteric, oracular remarks every two minutes which confused and bored even me. I shouted, 'I'm Batman,' at the top of my lungs at the end of a telephone conversation with Dr. Mann - all not because the dice said so, but because I felt like it.

I would break into laughter for no reason at all, I would overreact to situations, becoming angry, fearful or compassionate far in excess of that normally demanded. I wasn't *consistent*. Sometimes I'd be gay, at others sad; sometimes I'd be articulate, serious, brilliant; at others, absurd, abstracted, dumb. Only my being in the process of analysis with Jake kept me free to walk the streets. As long as I did nothing violent, people could still feel relatively at ease: 'Poor Dr. Rhinehart, but Dr. Fester is helping him.'

Lil was becoming increasingly worried about me, but since the die always rejected the option that I tell her the truth, I kept making semi-rational excuses for my absurdities. She talked with Jake and Arlene and Dr. Mann, and they all had perfectly rational and usually brilliant explanations of what was happening, but unfortunately no suggestions as to how to end it.

'In a year or two...' said Dr. Mann benevolently to Lil, who told me she almost started screaming. I assured her that I'd try harder to control my whims.

National Habit-Breaking Month certainly didn't help matters. How upset people become when confronting the breakdown of patterns, how upset or how joy-filled. My jogging into the office, my absurd speeches, my blasphemous efforts to seduce the sexless and incorruptible Miss Reingold, my drunkenness, my nonsensical behavior with my patients - all brought to those who witnessed them shock and dismay, but also, I began to notice, pleasure.

How we laugh and take joy in the irrational, the purposeless

and the absurd. Our longing for these bursts out of us against all the restraints of morality and reason. Riots, revolutions, catastrophes: how they exhilarate us. How depressing it is to read the same news day after day. Oh God, if only something would happen; meaning, if only patterns would break down.

By the end of that month I was thinking if only Nixon would get drunk and say to someone, 'Fuck you, buddy.' If only William Buckley or Billy Graham would say, 'Some of my best friends are Communists'; if only a sportscaster would just once say 'Sure is a boring game, folks.' But they don't. So each of us travels, to Fort Lauderdale, to Vietnam, to Morocco, or gets divorced, or has an affair, or tries a new job, a new neighborhood, a new drug, in a desperate effort to find something new. Patterns, patterns, oh, to break those chains. But we drag our old selves with us and they impose their solid oak frames on all our experience.

But in most ways National Habit-Breaking Month turned out to be impractical; I ended up at one point letting the dice decide when I would go to bed and for how long I would sleep. My sleeping a random number of hours at randomly selected times quickly made me irritable, washed out and occasionally high, especially when kicked by drugs or alcohol. When and whether I ate, washed, shaved, brushed my teeth were also dice-determined for a three-day period. As a result, I once or twice found myself using my portable electric razor in the middle of a midtown crunch of people (passers-by looking around for the camera crew), brushing my teeth in a nightclub lavatory, taking baths and getting a rubdown at Vic Tanny's and eating my main meal at 4 A.M. at Nedick's.

Another time the Die ordered me to sensitize myself to every moment, to live each moment fully awake. It seemed a marvelously aesthetic thing to do. I pictured myself as Walter Pater John Ruskin Oscar Wilde all rolled into one. What I first became aware of during Aesthetic Sensitivity Day was that I had the sniffles. I may have had them for months, years even, and never noticed it. In January, thanks to this random command of the Die, I became conscious of a periodic intake of air through my nostrils running through some accumulated mucous which produced a sound normally denoted as a 'sniff.' Were it not for the dice I would have remained an insensitive clod.

I became aware of other previously unrealized sense experi-

ences during that Sensitivity Week. Lying in bed with Lil in the early morning hours I would listen fascinated to the symphony of street noises from below, noises which previously I had named silence – meaning that Larry and Evie were not awake. Admittedly after about two days they became a quite monotonous and second-rate symphony, but for two mornings they – and I – lived again. Another day I went to the Museum of Modern Art and tried desperately to experience aesthetic bliss, decided after half an hour to shoot for simple pleasure and settled at the end of a footsore hour and a half for being content with a low level of pain. My visual sense must have atrophied at some point and even the mighty dice couldn't resurrect it. The next day I was happy the dice killed off Walter Pater.

In general, during that month in clothes I wore what I never wore; in words I swore what I never swore; in sex I whored what I never whored.

Breaking sexual habits and values was the hardest of all. In rambling down the stairs to merge with Arlene I was not altering my sexual values: I was only fulfilling them. Adultery did break a habit of fidelity, but fidelity was the most trivial of my sexual habit-values. Mary, Mother of Jesus, once suggested that the nature of a person's sexuality defines his whole life, but she knew better than to assume that when one had defined an individual as heterosexual, homosexual, bisexual or asexual one was done. I at first didn't know better. I assumed in my typical mechanical way that breaking sexual habits meant changing favorite sexual positions, changing women, changing from women to men, from men to boys, changing to total abstention and so on. My polymorphous perverse tendencies were vaguely thrilled by this prospect and I began one night, returning from a party, by trying to penetrate my wife's anus at 2 A.M. in the apartment elevator. Lil, however, not so much indignant or inhibited as uninterested, insisted on getting out of the elevator and going to bed and going to sleep.

Since Arlene and I seemed to have made love in most of the normal conceivable ways, the only way to break habits there, I concluded, was to abstain, or even better, feel guilty about our affair.

When I turned for a new woman I realized that it was my duty according to the mandate to change my taste in women. Therefore my next conquest would have to be old, thin, gray-haired, wear glasses, have big feet and be fond of Doris Day-

Rock Hudson movies. Although I'm sure many such women exist in New York, I soon realized that they were as difficult to locate and date as the equal number of women whose figures more or less matched that of Raquel Welch. I would have to lower my standards to old, thin and spiritual and let the other precise trivialities fall as they may.

The image of Miss Reingold leapt to my mind and I shuddered. If I were to break my sexual values I would have to seduce her. When consulted, the die said yes.

Seldom have I felt less respect for the die's judgment. Miss Reingold was undoubtedly the antithesis of all my sexual appetites, the Brigitte Bardot of my netherworld. She wasn't of course old; rather she had the remarkable ability to create at the age of thirty-six the impression she was sixty-three. The idea that she urinated was unthinkable, and I blush even to write about it here. In one thousand two hundred and six days with Ecstein and Rhinehart not once to our knowledge had she used the office bathroom. The only odor she gave off was the pervasive smell of baby powder. I didn't know whether she was flat-chested or not; one doesn't speculate on the measurements of one's mother or grandmother.

Her speech was more chaste than that of a Dickensian heroine; she would read back a report on the sexual activities of a superhuman nymphomaniac as if it were a long, bullish announcement of a corporation's phenomenal growth activities. At the end she would ask: 'Would you like me to change the sentence about Miss Werner's multiple intercourse into parallel structure?'

Nevertheless, not my will, O Die, but Thy will be done, and with morbid fascination I took her out to dinner one evening about three weeks through National Habit-Breaking Month and, as the evening progressed, began to sense, much to my horror, that I might succeed. I went to the men's room after dinner and consulted the die about several possible options, but all it told me to do was smoke two marijuana cigarettes; no cocaine before the tooth-pulling. Squirm as I might, I found myself later that evening sitting beside her on the couch discussing (I swear I didn't introduce the subject) nymphomaniacs. Although I'd begun to note as the hours wore by that she had a pretty smile (when she kept her mouth closed), her lowcut black dress on her white body, and somehow of a black drape hung on a vertical coffin

'But do you think nymphomaniacs enjoy their li



saying with the spontaneous randomness and blissful indifference which pot smoking and Miss Reingold seemed to produce.

'Oh no,' she said quickly, nudging her spectacles up an eighth of an inch. 'They must be very unhappy.'

'Yes, perhaps, but I can't help wondering if the great pleasure they get from being loved by so many men doesn't compensate for their unhappiness.'

'Oh no. Dr. Ecstein told me that according to Rogers, Rogers and Hillsman, eighty-two point five percent receive no pleasure from copulation.' She was sitting so stiffly on the couch that periodically my pot-polluted vision made me believe I was talking to a dressmaker's dummy.

'Yeah,' I said. 'But Rogers nor Rogers nor Hillsman have ever been nymphomaniacs. I doubt they've ever been women.' I smiled triumphantly. 'A theory I'm developing is that nymphomaniacs actually are joy-filled hedonists but lie to psychiatrists that they're frigid in order to seduce the psychiatrists.'

'Oh no,' she said. 'Who could ever seduce a psychiatrist?'

For a moment we blinked incredulously at each other, and then she went through a kaleidoscope of colors, ending with typing-paper white.

'You're right,' I said firmly. 'The woman is a patient and our code of ethics prevents our giving in to them, but...' I trailed off, losing the thread of my argument.

In her small voice, with her two hands wrestling with her handkerchief, she asked:

'But...?'

'But?' I echoed.

'You said your code prevents you from ever giving into them but...'

'Oh yeah. But it's hard. We're continually being excited but with no ethical way of satisfying ourselves.'

'Oh, Dr. Rhinehart, you're *married*.'

'Married? Oh yes. That's true. I'd forgotten.' I looked at her, my face a tragic mask. 'But my wife practices yoga and consequently can only engage in sexual congress with a guru.'

She stared back at me.

'Are you certain?' she asked.

'I can't even do a modified headstand. I have come to doubt that I am a man.'

'Oh no, Dr. Rhinehart.'

'To make matters worse, it has always depressed me that you never seem to be sexually attracted to me.'

Miss Reingold's face went through its psychedelic color show and again ended in typing-paper white. Then she said in the smallest audible voice I've ever heard:

'But I am.'

'You . . . you . . .'

'I am sexually attracted to you.'

'Oh.'

I paused, all the forces of the residual me mobilizing my body to run for the door; only religious discipline kept me on the couch.

'Miss Reingold!' I shouted impulsively. 'Will you make me a man?' I sat erect and leaned toward her.

She stared at me, removed her glasses from her face and placed them on the rug beside the couch.

'No, no,' she said softly, her eyes focusing vaguely on the couch between us. 'I can't.'

At first, for the only time in my life not dictated by the die, I was impotent. I had to sit on the bed beside her, nude, in a modified lotus position, not touching, and for seven or eight minutes meditate with all the powers of a yogi on Arlene's breasts, Linda Reichman's behind and Lil's innards, until, at last, with the powers properly concentrated, I assumed the cat's cradle position over Miss Reingold's assumed corpse position and lowered myself into *samadhi* (emptiness).

It is a frightening experience to make love to one's mother, especially one's mother as a corpse, and nowhere near what Freud imagined it. That I looked upon her as a mother image and yet succeeded in assuming the proper positions and fulfilling all the appropriate exercises is a tribute to my budding abilities as a yogi. It was a great step forward in the breaking of psychological barriers, and I trembled all the next day thinking about it. Surprisingly also, I've felt much closer to Miss Reingold ever since.

## Chapter Twenty-five

But not *that* close.

My friends, it's time for confession. Amusing as I or you may have found some of the events of my early dicelife, I must admit that being the dice man was sometimes hard work. Depressing, lonely and hard. The fact is, I didn't want to go bowling. Or to break up with Arlene for a month. Or play an outfielder for the Detroit Tigers. Or seduce Miss Reingold. Or have sexual intercourse in one sexual position when Lil wanted it in another. Fulfilling these missions of fate was a chore. Fulfilling many others was a chore. Sometimes when the dice sent me rolling randomly to a bowling alley or vetoed my playing Romeo, I felt like the slave you take me to be, yoked to an unsympathetic and unintelligent master, one whose whims were getting increasingly on my nerves. The resistance of my residual self to certain dice decisions never ceased and always dragged at my desire to become the Random Man. I was attempting to permit that one desire, the desire to kill my old self and to learn something new about the nature of man, to dominate the vast majority of the rest of my desires. It was an ascetic, religious struggle.

Sometimes, of course, the dice discovered and permitted the expression of some of my deepest (and previously unrealized) impulses, and as time passed this occurred more and more frequently. But at other times the dice discovered that I hadn't gone bowling for fourteen years because I didn't like to bowl, and I hadn't slept with a fat slob because I was correct in sensing I wouldn't enjoy it. I suppose some suppressed one-thousandth of me may like bowling, clods, slobes and position twenty-three, but my level of perception wasn't able to record it.

And so you, my friends, when you've picked up a pencil and written a list of options and rolled the dice, you may be disappointed. You've gone through the motions a few times and then concluded that the dicelife is a fake and I a fraud.

One desire, my friends, one: to kill yourself. You must desire this. You must feel that a voyage of discovery is more important than all the little trips which the normal consumer-self wants to buy.

The dice save only the lost. The normal integrated personality resists variety, change. But the split, compulsive, unhappy

neurotic is given release from the prison of checks and balances. He becomes in a way an 'authoritarian personality,' but obeys not God, father, church, dictator or philosopher but his own creative imagination - and the dice. 'If the fool would but persist in his folly,' Yossarian once said, 'he would become the dice man.'

But it isn't easy; only saints and the insane ever try it. And only the latter make it.

## Chapter Twenty-seven

For February the dice ordered me to experiment with the Felloni-Rhinehart sex investigation. Specifically, 'something new and valuable.' I squared up the box and spent several days trying to see what I could press.

The limitations in experimenting with man are great. You could force them to answer questions, but you could not force them to do nothing. With the other animals you could ask them nothing and make them do anything. You could castrate them, cut out half their brain, throw them over hot coals to get their dinner or their supply of food, water, sex or society for days or weeks. You could give them LSD in such massive dosages that they would forget everything. You could cut off their limbs one by one and study the results. Such experimentation tells us something about man. We have mice, brainless rats, schizophrenic hamsters, paraplegic sloths and legless chimpanzees, but we know nothing about man.

For ethical reason we aren't allowed to experiment with anything which they or their society consider sacred. The problem to which I was devoting my life - the problem of being can be changed - could never be changed, since the bone ingredient of all men is unchangeable; and it is unethical to insist that men change what they don't want to do.

I decided to try to change some of the results of the Loni-Rhinehart investigation. Since the results of sexual behavior I would try to change the results of the activities and actions. Unfortunately, I had spent twenty years of analysis to change a homosexual into a heterosexual, that then such change rarely occurred. Could I change a nymphomaniac to nymphomania? Masturbators to celibates? Seducers to adulteresses? Seducers to ascetics? The results were impossible.

To change man, the audience by which he is judged must be changed. A man is defined by the results of his people, institutions, authors, magazines, newspapers, philosophers by whom he pictures himself being judged. Major psychological disturbances, 'identity crises',

when an individual begins to change the audience for whom he plays: from parents to peers; from peers to the works of Albert Camus; from the Bible to Hugh Hefner. The change from I-am-he-who-is-a-good-son to I-am-he-who-is-a-good-buddy constitutes a revolution. On the other hand, if the man's buddies approve fidelity one year and infidelity the next, and the man changes from faithful husband to rake, no revolution has occurred. The class rule remains intact; only the policy on a minor matter has been altered.

In first becoming the dice man, my audience was changed from my peers in psychiatry to Blake, Nietzsche, Lao-Tzu. My goal was to destroy all sense of an audience; to become without values, evaluators, without desires: to be inhuman, all-inclusive, God.

In moving the dice man into sexual research, however, what I aspired to was a piece of ass. Zeus wished to disguise himself as beast and fornicate with a beautiful woman. But my equal desire, as strong as lust, was to become the audience for our subjects. As audience I might be able to create an atmosphere of all-embracing permissiveness, one in which the virgin would feel free to express her latest lech; the queer to express his latent desire for cunt. The dice man had discovered that the experimenting man was permitted almost everything. Could I create an experimental situation for the subjects which would be equally permissive?

Such was my hope. Seduction is the art of making normal, desirable, good and rewarding what had previously seemed abnormal, undesirable, evil and unrewarding. Seduction was the art of changing another's audience and hence his personality. I refer, of course, to the classical seduction of the 'innocent' and not to the mutual masturbation of promiscuous adults.

Dr. Felloni's dean-of-women dignity and my own rugged, professional look had convinced our subjects that we were the epitome of respectability. They had become more accustomed than the average person to discussing all sorts of outrageous sexuality with strange, noncondemning adults. All of this might ready them, so my thinking went, for any outrageous instructions we might give them.

'Now this afternoon, Mr. F., in the next room is a shy but promiscuous young woman your own age. She has been paid to make love to you. Be a gentleman with her, but insist that she fuck good. At the conclusion of your experience fill out

the questionnaire in this sealed envelope. Be as honest as possible with your answers ; they will be completely anonymous.'

'Miss F., in the next room is a shy young man your own age named F. Like yourself he is a virgin. He has been told that you are a prostitute hired to teach him the art of love. For this experiment we wish to see how well you can play this role by interacting with him sexually to permit us to collect as much data as possible. If you overcome your inhibitions about nudity and intimate sexual contact with a man you will receive a bonus of one hundred dollars. If you permit him to have sexual intercourse you will receive a bonus of two hundred dollars. For other possible bonuses read pages five and six of the enclosed instruction sheet and questionnaire. You need not fear pregnancy, since the other subject has been medically certified as sterile.'

'Tomorrow afternoon, Mr. J., you are to go to the address printed on this card. You will meet there a man who has been told you are a fellow homosexual. He will attempt to seduce you. You are to encourage him as much as possible, while noting your own feelings and reactions. If he achieves an orgasm you will receive a bonus of one hundred dollars for producing such significant data. If you also achieve orgasm you will receive an additional two-hundred-dollar bonus. We are interested in studying the social and sexual intercourse between normal men like yourself and homosexual men. Within the enclosed...'

Instructions like these came parading through my mind. I might have to hire prostitutes and homosexuals, but in some cases I might have subjects playing both roles. (Two heterosexual men banging away at each other collecting data.)

I began to believe that human beings are capable of anything. Our other-directed modern men are so accustomed to looking to the immediate social environment for approval or disapproval that, given the correct experimental leader, tone and situation, I should be able to get the subjects to alter their customary sexual roles.

It seemed a worthy project, worthy of the Marquis de Sade. Consciously, I wanted to confirm my theory of the malleability of man, but I seemed to be taking a rather fiendish non-rational delight in the project.



## Chapter Twenty-eight

Hectic, hectic, hectic. The life of an experimenter is not easy. To set up mazes, find rats to run them, measure the results and to tabulate everything is hard. To set up sexual encounters, find people to run them, measure the results and *believe* everything is harder.

Nevertheless, in the next few weeks I completed the complicated task of setting up what was officially named the Rhinehart-Felloni Investigation of Amorality Tolerance, but which has become generally known among New York psychiatrists as 'Fuck Without Fear for Fun and Profit,' and in the New York *Daily News* as 'The Columbia Copulation Caper.' I had some trouble convincing Dr. Felloni of the correctness of our joint venture, but I took her to lunch one day and just kept talking about 'test of the stability of behavioural patterns and attitudes under experimental conditions' and 'the Leiberwitz-Loom criteria for defining a homosexual,' and 'heterosexuality as defined operationally by the maintenance of an erection in the presence of a woman for five or more minutes' and, as my clincher, 'the complete quantification of all results.' She finally agreed and laid great professional stress on the necessity of anonymity for all subjects.

The first two weeks of the experiment were incredibly confusing. Too many of our hired personnel - prostitutes male and female - were failing to show up or, more usually, failing to follow instructions. Women hired to play hard-to-get would bring along a friend and give our subject an orgy. Another woman hired to exhaust a Don Juan type sexually, fell asleep after fifteen minutes and couldn't be roused even by a gentle beating with a belt.

Many of our subjects, after seeming to agree to the experiment, disappeared. I was desperate for subjects, 'lab assistants' (our 'help' was so designated in our budget and foundation report) and data. I found myself tempted to hire my wife, Arlene, Miss Reingold even, to meet the various appointments. Dr. Felloni reported that she was having the same problem with the group of subjects she was dealing with. The confusion was further compounded by our having to use the same two apartments for all our 'experimental sessions.'

I sent Arlene out to play the role of a lonely, prudish, love-

sick housewife for a sexually hard-up and inhibited college student who had been instructed to play the role of a Henry Miller; she came back exhilarated. She announced that the evening had been a total success, although she admitted that nothing much had happened for the first two hours and that she may not have stuck completely to her assigned role when she walked into the living room nude after taking a shower. She volunteered to assist in any way she could if needed further for the experiment and even agreed not to tell Jake.

Finally I decided that the old coach himself had to get off the bench and into the game. Someone had to get in there who could plug up the holes when they needed to be plugged or burst up the middle for a score. A hush fell over the crowd when I trotted onto the field.

Miss T. was required by the instructions to: 'Spend the evening at the apartment of Mr. O., age thirty-five. Man will have paid one hundred dollars to spend the evening with you. Mr. O. is a lonely college professor whose wife died a year ago. He knows nothing about this experiment and believes a friend has provided him with a young, inexperienced call girl. You are to try to give yourself to him as completely as possible. Examine closely your own attitudes and emotions and fill out the questions contained in the enclosed envelope.'

According to her answers on our attitude questionnaires, Miss T. was nineteen years old, had never had sexual intercourse, had 'necked heavily' with only two boys, had kissed 'less than ten' boys and had never had any conscious lesbian inclinations or experiences. She believed that premarital sexual intercourse was wrong because 'God punished it finitely,' it was 'psychologically unhealthy' and there was 'danger of pregnancy.' She affirmed that as a positive attribute it procreated the race. According to her she had never masturbated because 'God punished it finitely.' She was vaguely intolerant of all sexual deviations from the heterosexual norm, extremely conventional in most other attitudes and indicated no close relationships with anyone except her mother, to whom she seemed quite close. She reported that she was a believing Catholic and hoped to be a social worker for emotionally disturbed children.

It seemed to me unlikely that Miss T. would even show up. Of the seven other subjects to whom I had given similar instructions (to meet each other or hired help), three had never





'Put your tongue in my mouth,' I said, and as I slid sideways to a horizontal position on the couch, I pulled her over on top of me. She was remarkably light and her tongue came out of her small mouth in little tentative darts like a snake trying to frighten someone. I brought both my hands up under her skirt and panties and, exploring between her legs, got lost. That is, of the two caves traditionally located in the underbrush, I was able to locate only one, and that, in the immortal words of Robert Frost, 'The one less traveled by.' Had she been sewn up? I discovered and caressed a slippery crack, but it led not to the warm-cushioned opening of a Lil or Arlene but to a deadend: a virgin with a vengeance.

She pulled up a few inches away from me.

'Please don't touch me there,' she said.

'I beg your pardon,' I said and delicately withdrew my hands and soothed down her skirt.

She hesitated a moment and then brought her little mouth down warmly on mine, her hands framing my face. Her abdomen pressing down on my extended penis began to create climactic feelings so I broke our kiss and rolled us both into sitting positions again. She looked up at me brightly, as if pleased by having brought home a good report card. Of course it may have been the brightness of sexual excitement: certainly my gooey fingers didn't indicate scholarly interests. Looking at her a bit drunkenly I asked in a husky voice:

'Shall we go to the bedroom?'

'Oh no,' she said, 'I have to finish my drink.' Further straightening her skirt, she reached forward and took a healthier swig from her gin and tonic. I rediscovered my glass on the floor at my feet and finished it off.

'Are you a professor?' she asked.

'Yes I am.'

'What of?'

'Of history.'

'Oh yes, you told me. That must be interesting. What history do you like best?'

'I'm a specialist in papal bulls of the Renaissance. Look, can't I get you another drink?'

'Oh really? I loved reading about Cesare Borgia and the Popes. I'd love another drink. Were the Popes really as bad as the books say?'

I walked liquorward a trifle aggressively but said over my shoulder: 'It all depends on what you mean by bad.'

'I mean have children and all.'

'Alexander I had several children as did Pope John IX, but before they became popes.'

'The Church is much purer today.'

I poured her a huge gin, added a trickle of tonic, gave myself a bathtub-glassful of Scotch and marched back toward the couch.

'How much college have you finished?' I asked.

'This is my fourth semester at Hunter. I'm majoring in sociology I think. Oh! - Erl -'

'What's the matter?' For a moment I thought I must have spilled her drink as I handed it to her, but it wasn't that. My fly wasn't open. But she looked frightened.

'Nothing,' she said and took a deep drink from her gin and tonic. 'But ... how did you ... I mean why did you think I went to college?'

'You seem intelligent,' I said. 'You couldn't know all about the Renaissance just from high school.'

She looked away from me at the grimy, unused fireplace and didn't seem to be as cheerful as she had been.

'Doesn't it seem ... strange that a college girl should be ... here?'

Ah. Her breach of role playing was bothering her.

'Certainly not,' I said firmly. 'According to my friend, almost all the call girls he knows are college students, many of them straight-A students. Tuition costs being what they are, what can a girl do?'

This line of reasoning seemed to take some time to absorb. She blushed and turned away at the phrase *call girl*, but finally said quietly:

'That's true.'

'Also,' I said, 'College girls learn how irrational all sexual inhibitions are. They learn how safe sexual intercourse can be and how profitable.'

'But -' she said. 'But - of course some girls still fear that God - that sex -'

'You're right there, of course. But even many deeply religious college girls have also become call girls.'

She now looked up at me questioningly.

'They realize,' I went on, 'that God always examines the reasons we do anything. If a girl gives her body to man to give him pleasure and to earn money so that she may educate

herself and thus increase her ability to serve God she is actually performing a good act.'

She looked away nervously.

'But God says adultery is a sin,' she said.

'Ah, but the Hebrew word for adultery, *fornucatio*, actually means sexual intercourse had only for pleasure. The Commandment actually should be translated: "Thou shalt not selfishly give yourself in adultery." Many of the girls at LIU in Bible History 162 have been quite surprised and pleased to realize the true nature of God's command.'

She was hunched over on the couch beside me drinking her gin with absentminded abandonment. She stared into her glass as if it might hold the ultimate answers.

'But God says that ...' she started. 'Paul says that ... the Church says that -'

'Only *selfish* pleasure. The Hebrew is absolutely explicit. In Second Corinthians, verse eight, the text reads: "She who lets a man know her for the glory of God is blessed, but woe unto her who in selfishness commits adultery. Verily the very earth will swallow her up."'

Again hesitation. Then:

'The glory of God?' she asked.

'Saint Thomas Aquinas interprets this as meaning any act which is intended to further the individual's ability to glorify God. He cites the case of Bathsheba's daughter who gave herself to the Aramite that she might convert him. He also cites the prostitute Magdalen of the New Testament who, according to tradition, continued to sell herself to men that she might better know them and testify to the Divinity of Christ.'

'Really?' she said sharply, as if at last Truth were being touched.

'In Dante's *Paradisio*, which you may have read, the religious prostitutes are placed in the third sphere of heaven, just below the saints, but above the nuns and virgins. In the words of Beatrice, his guide, "A fugitive and cloistered virtue can never reach as close to God as an active one. If the soul is pure the body cannot be soiled."'

'Oh I read that. Was that Dante?'

'*Paradisio*, Canto Seventeen I think. Milton paraphrased this verse in his famous essay on divorce.'

'It's funny ...' she said and jiggled the remaining ice cubes in her glass before taking another swallow.

'The Church has naturally played down this tradition,' I

said, taking a satisfied swallow from my own drink. 'It has felt that young girls might be seduced unnecessarily in their dream of converting men, and although such an act would not be sinful, it was decided to create the impression that all sex was evil. The masses, of course, have thus lived in ignorance of God's true purpose.'

At last she looked up at me and smiled sadly.

'I'm going to take more history,' she said.

I turned to her, and with my right hand brushed away her hair from her cheek.

'I'd love to have a student like you in one of my classes. I get so lonely for someone with whom I can talk about things.'

'Do you?'

'I feel spiritually lost, alone - since losing my wife. I've needed the warmth of a woman's mind and body, but until this evening all I've ever met were dull, pedantic women that weren't able to . . . unselfishly give themselves to me.'

'I like you very much,' she said tentatively.

'Ah Terry, Terry . . .'

I took her in my arms, spilling the last of her drink onto the floor and couch. I hugged her tenderly, my eyes, well above the level of her head, fixing idly on the manila folder on the bookcase. The radio was blaring, 'Why Don't We Do It in the Road?'

'Please, my darling,' I said, 'come with me now to the bedroom.'

She held herself still in my arms and didn't answer. The music stopped, and the radio announcer began running off at the mouth about the incredible power of Gleem toothpaste: he followed that without pausing for breath with kind words for Robert Hall's.

'You're so big,' she finally said.

'I have a great need for you.'

She remained still. I released my embrace and looked down at her. She looked up at me nervously and said: 'Kiss me first.' She reached her arms up around my neck, and as we kissed I slid heavily forward on top of her. We writhed together for more than a minute.

'Am I too heavy?' I asked.

'A little bit,' she said.

'Let's go to the bedroom.'

We disentangled and stood up. 'Where to?' she asked, as if we were about to begin a long hike.



'This way,' I said, and after we had negotiated the ten paces into the bedroom I added: 'That's the bathroom.' We looked at each other. 'You undress there. I'll undress here.'

'Thank you,' she said and walked into the bathroom, her shoulder just bumping the doorway as she entered. I undressed myself, dropping my clothes neatly in select piles between the bed and an old walnut dresser. Inside the kingsize double bed, I put my hand behind my head and watched the ceiling swirl like cosmic nebulae. Five minutes later the nebulae were still providing the only active entertainment.

'Terry?' I called neutrally.

'I can't,' she said from inside the bathroom.

'What?' I said loudly.

She came out fully dressed, her eyes red and the lipstick on her lower lip completely chewed away. Standing stiffly half-way between the bathroom door and the bed she said: 'It's been a mistake. I'm not who you think I am.'

'Then who are you?'

'I'm - I'm nobody.'

'Oh no, Terry, you're wonderful, whoever you are.'

'I'm - but I can't go to bed with you.'

'Ah Terry,' I said and started to get out of bed when I saw by her facial expression that she might run. Sitting up, I said: 'Well then, who are you?'

'I'm - I was sent here as part of a - an experiment of the Columbia Medical School.'

'No!' I said, flabbergasted.

'Yes. I'm really just a college girl, a pretty innocent college girl, I guess. I wanted to do the experiment the best I could, but I can't.'

'My God, Terry, that's incredible, that's wonderful. So was I.'

She looked at me blankly.

'So - were - you - what?'

'I was sent here as part of an investigation into the nature of human sexuality conducted by the Columbia Medical School. I'm Father Forbes of the Cathedral of St. John the Divine.'

She stared at my bulky, nude torso.

'I see,' she said.

'The quirks of fate have sent together two innocents!' I raised my eyes to the ceiling briefly; it responded with a swirl.

'I've got to go,' she answered.

'My child, you can't go. Don't you see there is the God in this. Have you ever given yourself to a man?'

'No, Father, and I must go.'

'My child, you must stay. By everything that is must stay.' I rose with stately dignity from the bed and with a look of great fatherliness and agape, arms outstretched in welcome, I approached Miss T.

'No,' she said and held up one arm limply.

I never hesitated, but embraced her fully and fastened her hair with one hand and her back with the other.

'My sweet child you are my salvation. Had I been a prostitute I would be forever damned; the woman who has been acting selfishly and I would have been a curse to the world. But sexual congress with a Catholic girl giving herself of her will, and thus unselfishly, is to liberate you from corruption.'

She stood stiffly and unyielding in my loose embrace. Then she began crying.

'I don't believe you're a priest, I want to go home. I dled and sobbed against my upper belly.

'In domine Pater incubus dolorarum; et magnum est. Non solere sanctum raro noncuninglingus variorum delictim. Habere et

She looked up at me.

'But why are you here?'

'Manus Patri, manus Patri. For you come together in a love spiritus delicti et

'You're so strange,' she said.

'This is a sacred moment. Go, and come.'

When she came out of the bathroom a minutes later she was modestly holding her belly, but exposing two cheerful, round

I threw back the covers on her side and a ten-year-old child hopping into bed with

Terry Tracy fulfilled her spiritual admirable warmth, poise, obedience When I had difficulty penetrating her to baptize the uncircumcized child mouth and this she proceeded to do some several minutes before I that time I was too spiritually without the likelihood of my plete divine grace. She sympathized

hands and then lowered her sacred mouth over the trembling child, bathing it: she spoke in tongues. I was groaning with total incoherence and indignity as one does during such emotional services when I felt the Holy Spirit ascending. I tried to withdraw the uncircumcized child from the holy temple and whispered 'Stop!' but the angel did not cease her ministrations. The nebulae, the child and I all exploded at once in a divine fusion of feeling: I plunged away in her mouth. After ten or fifteen seconds during which I was completely out of the mere world of mortal men, I returned from my spiritual journey.

Her mouth and hands were still warmly engulfing my penis and balls as if nothing had happened. I lay still for another half-minute and then putting a hand on Terry's hand I said:

'Terry.'

She raised her head from me for the first time in three or four minutes, but without even turning to me she swung her behind around much nearer me and said:

'Touch me. Oh please touch me.'

When I put my hands between her legs and began to stroke and poke, she pressed back fiercely. This time I slid a finger inside the appropriate and proper opening. Her mouth was trying to swallow a relatively relaxed and thoroughly baptized member. She rolled over and for the first time made a groan. Of sorts: it sounded distinctly like one of disappointment.

I was feeling depressed, guilty, angry and inadequate, but being the dice man playing the professor-priest-customer I merely rolled away from her and told her that it had been delicious.

She didn't say anything. We lay in silence for ten minutes. I was determined to ram home to victory as soon as I could rally my red army back into the peninsula, but for the time being all I could do was lie there and feel inadequate. I didn't even wonder what she was thinking.

'Can you try again?' she said.

We turned toward each other and fell into a passionate half-hate embrace, until she clawed at my shoulder to tell me I was squeezing too tight. After a few minutes of love play I lifted her up on to her hands and knees and invited myself to try to enter from the rear. We placed the dragon's head at the mouth of the cave and tried to encourage him to enter. It was like pushing a dog down the cellar stairs for a bath. We pressed again. A marvellous thing happened: my dragon suddenly

sprung past the outside barrier and plunged in a full three-quarter inch. She screamed and fell forward. I began to apologize, but she got immediately back on her knees and was groping back between her legs: a steering committee. After a few more charges, the dragon had disappeared deep into the cave and seemed to be nuzzling contentedly at her stomach. My big hands manipulating her easily at the waist, I felt the present experience was well worth the wait. It was magnificent. The apartment doorbell rang.

For a moment both of us were so intent on the pleasure of my filling her insides that the noise didn't register. When it did, she raised her head like a deer smelling a rifle and said:

'What's that?'

Stupidly: 'The doorbell.'

She pulled herself down and away from me and rolled over. She was frightened.

'Who is it?'

Stupidly: 'I don't know.'

Then, regaining my superman self: 'It must be someone at the wrong apartment.'

'No. You'd better go see.'

Standing at the door was a short, thickset young man wearing glasses. He seemed stunned to see me.

'Is this -', he glanced again at the door I was holding slightly ajar. 'Is this apartment 4-G?'

Not remembering, I leaned my naked torso out and around to look at what he had just looked at. It was 4-G.

'Yes, it is,' I said helpfully.

He stared at me.

'I thought - I was supposed - to meet someone here at nine o'clock.'

'Nine o'clock?' I was beginning to understand.

'I guess I'm a little late . . . Maybe -'

'Were you - were you supposed to meet a girl here who -'

'Yes,' he broke in. 'I was supposed to meet a girl here.' He smiled nervously and adjusted his blond-framed glasses. I noticed two pimples on his forehead.

'What's your name?' I asked, still holding the door ajar.

'Er - Ray Smith.'

'I see.' His real name as I remembered it was O'Reilly, and he was, according to his answers on the questionnaire, a smooth, uninhibited young man with women. He was to meet a prostitute, one I had personally hired and instructed to make



Terry Thrush, I'd like you to meet George Lovelace. George, this is Terry.'

'Oh, hi,' said Terry, with a bright smile.

'How do you do?' said George Ray Smith O'Reilly Lovelace.

'How would you like to fuck her, George?' I asked, my own penis lifting its head in more than idle curiosity.

'You first,' he blurted.

'Okay, me first, Terry. Give me your ass again.' Terry looked a little surprised, but quickly hopped into bed beside our young man, and stuck her little behind plumply into the air. Her face on a pillow she turned, smiling brightly at George, whose head lay looking ceilingward on the other pillow a foot away. George looked sick.

I placed my penis, prodded and poked, and, with all deliberate speed, it plunged deep into Terry's warm, wet interior. My God, that was good. Terry had helped aim me with her hands but now as I began easing myself in and out she moved herself on her elbows over to silent George and – undoubtedly smiling brightly to the last – moved her face over his and began giving him her sexy, snakelike kisses.

George lay as rigid as a dried straw, except for his central limb, which was as limp as a wet straw. I pulled Tiny Terry's thighs against me and more or less picked her bodily up and deposited her face on Georgie's belly. Discovering a poor, lonely, unloved cock, she did her duty.

The long and the short of it, Reader – and that is the usual sequence in these affairs – was that I made a splendid splash in Terry's interior and Terry did enough favorable groaning and straining to please everyone, presumably including herself. When she finally let go of old Sir George his limb was just as limp as before. However, as Terry rolled onto her back away from him I saw that the rest of him was at last limp too. Sir George too had seen the Holy Grail.

'Terry has a very nice mouth, don't you think, George?'

'Er, yes, she does,' he said.

'You're exceptionally beautiful in the interior, Terry,' I went on.

'Thank you,' she said. My two young friends were lying on their backs side by side while I had settled back on my knees near the foot of the bed. I was feeling very tired and depressed, and my mood was manifesting itself by my heavy-handed irony.



leaned my slightly debauched face around the edge of the door, stood Dr. Felloni. We exchanged stares in total disbelief for five full seconds. Then she blushed so fully that I can only describe it by saying that her head, which was of course nodding vigorously, had a climax. She turned and ran down the hall. The next day her secretary phoned to say that she was attending a conference in Zurich and would be away for two weeks.





her face and body hidden by the sheet and George's ample bulk.

Even this rude interruption did not destroy my elevation. During these glorious minutes I was taking myself totally seriously. I went to the bathroom and got them a towel and after a giggle or two they lay together silently, again oblivious of my presence. As the sheet lay limp and still over their silent forms I tiptoed to the spot where my trousers were deposited on the floor and extricated from the pocket my dice. 'Odd,' I would begin dice therapy, with George and Terry tonight; 'even,' I would not. Confidently I flipped a die onto the foot of the bed: a six. Hmmm. Like the good fairy who has left a dime under the pillow, I picked up my clothes and stole away into the night, the immortal words of Christ echoing in my ears: 'Physician, help yourself: thus you help your patients too. Let this be his best help that he may behold with his eyes the man who heals himself.' I was determined to rip from my body the undistinguished clothes of Dr. Lucius Rhinehart and stand forth before my patients naked and revealed: The Dice Man.



'Because many small parts of you *don't* want to fuck. A small part of you wants to hit me, or wants to run back to Jake, or wants to talk to me about psychoanalysis. But these parts of you are never allowed to live. You suppress them because most of you just wants to fuck.'

'If they're small parts of me, let them stay small.'

Dr. Rhinehart tipped back in his chair and sighed. He took out a pipe and began filling it. He took one of the silver dice and shook it in one hand and dropped it on his desk. He frowned.

'I'm going to tell you how a God was born: the birth of the Dice Man.'

Dr. Rhinehart then narrated the story, slightly edited, of his discovery of the dice and his initial rape of Mrs. Ecstein. He concluded:

'Had I not given a small part of myself a chance to be chosen by the die we wouldn't be sitting here right now.'

'You only gave it one chance in six?'

'Yes. The point is that I gave a minority self a chance to be heard.'

'Only one chance in six?'

'We can never be full human beings until we develop all important aspects of ourselves.'

'Only one-sixth of you wanted me?'

'Arlene, that was an historical accident. We're talking theory. Don't you see how yielding to the dice opens whole new areas of life?'

'I feel used.'

'If I seduced you out of cold-blooded lust you would feel pleased. Because I let chance intervene you feel used.'

'Don't you feel *anything* strongly enough so that you don't want to use the dice?'

'Of course, but I try to overcome it.'

Dr. Rhinehart and Mrs. Ecstein looked at each other for a full minute, Dr. Rhinehart smiling selfconsciously and Mrs. Ecstein looking awed. At last she pronounced judgment.

'You're insane,' she said.

'Absolutely. Look, I'll show you how it works. I write down two, say three options. A one or a two means we'll continue this conversation, a three or a four means we'll end the hour right now and each let the dice decide something else for us to do for the next forty minutes. A five and ...'

'And a five or a six means we'll fuck.'



'Very good.'

She was smiling happily as if she were a child who has just learned how to read.

'If the die is a four or a five or a six it means we have to try to make a baby.'

'Ahh,' said Dr. Rhinehart.

'I've removed that rubber sort of plug Jake had a doctor put in me and I think I've just ovulated. I read a book and it's told me the two best positions to make a baby.'

'I see. Arlene, I -'

'Shall I toss?'

'Just a minute.'

'What for?'

'I - I'm thinking.'

'Hand me the die.'

'I believe that you have loaded the odds a bit,' said Dr. Rhinehart with his accustomed professional coolness. 'Let's say if it's a six we'll try one sexual position after another as determined from a list of six we will give it. Two minutes on each. Let the orgasms come where they may.'

'But the four and five still mean we make a baby?'

'Yes.'

'Okay. Do I flip?'

'All right.'

Mrs. Ecstein dropped the die. It read four.

'Ahh,' said Dr. Rhinehart.

'Yippee,' said Mrs. Ecstein.

'Precisely what are these two medically recommended fucks?' Dr. Rhinehart asked a trifle irritably.

'I'll show you. And whoever has the most orgasms wins.'

'Wins what?'

'I don't know. Wins a free pair of dice.'

'I see.'

'Why didn't we begin this therapy a long time ago?' Mrs. Ecstein asked. She was rapidly undressing.

'You understand,' the doctor said, slowly preparing himself for the operation, 'that after we have made love once, we must consult the die again.'

'Sure, sure, come here,' said Mrs. Ecstein and she was soon hard at work with Dr. Rhinehart in concentrated dice therapy. At 11 A.M. Dr. Rhinehart buzzed his secretary to announce that because he was probing particularly deeply that morning



## Chapter Thirty-one

Professor Orville Boggles of Yale tried it; Arlene Ecstein found it productive; Terry Tracy rediscovered God through it; patient Joseph Spezio of QSH thought it was a plot to drive him insane: dice therapy slowly but surely, and unbeknownst to my wife and colleagues, grew; but the Great Columbia Copulation Caper climaxed and was spent. Two Barnard College girls who had been instructed separately to enter into Lesbian relations with each other complained to their dean of women, who promptly began investigating. Although I assured her that Dr. Felloni and I were bona fide professionals, members of the American Medical Association, registered Republicans and in only moderate opposition to the war in Vietnam, she still found the experiment to be 'suspiciously outrageous' and I ended it.

Actually all our scheduled appointments had already been completed. Less than sixty percent had taken place as set up, and two graduate students and I were busy for weeks afterward trying to collect the manila folders with the completed questionnaires and trying to interview our lab assistants; but the experiment was finished. When I published an article on our work in the fall (Dr. Felloni declined to be associated with the article or the experiment), it created a mild stir and was one of the pieces of evidence used by my enemies to have me exiled from the AMA.

Although most of our subjects seem to have derived pleasure from their participation in the study, a few were traumatized. About ten days after my own *pas de trois* my office received a request that I treat one of Dr. Felloni's subjects in our joint experiment. This Miss Vigliota maintained that she had become neurotic because of her participation in our experiment and she was requesting therapy. The appointment was set up and the next day I was seated in my office at the scheduled hour elaborating in writing upon new dice exercises I had been creating. My office door opened and closed, a small girl entered, and when I looked up at her, she staggered forward and collapsed on the couch.

It was Terry 'Tracy' Vigliota. It took me twenty minutes to assure her that I was really Dr. Rhinehart, a psychiatrist, and that my participation with her in the experiment had been





She smiled a sad, soft Natalie Wood smile as she was  
cast.

'What if you're right?' I said.

'Pardon?'

'What if your feeling that all desires are ~~unreal~~ and all  
beliefs illusions is right, is the ~~main~~ ~~real~~ ~~truth~~ ~~of~~ ~~being~~,  
and the rest of men are living under ~~delusions~~ ~~with~~ ~~you~~ ~~ex-~~  
perience has permitted you to shed?'

'Of course, that's what I think,' she said.

'Then why not act upon your belief?'

The smile left her face and she ~~formed~~ ~~an~~ ~~un-~~ ~~ending~~  
at me.

'What do you mean?'

'Treat all of your desires as if they ~~had~~ ~~equal~~ ~~value~~ ~~and~~ ~~act~~  
of your beliefs as if it were as ~~much~~ ~~as~~ ~~truth~~ ~~as~~ ~~the~~ ~~rest~~'

'How?'

'Stop trying to create a ~~pattern~~ ~~a~~ ~~personality~~; just do what-  
ever you feel like.'

'But I don't feel like doing anything; ~~that's~~ ~~the~~ ~~problem~~.'

'That's because you're letting ~~one~~ ~~desire~~, ~~the~~ ~~desire~~ to be-  
lieve strongly and be a clearly ~~defined~~ ~~person~~, ~~with~~ ~~the~~ ~~rest~~  
of your various desires.'

'Maybe, but I don't see how I can change it.'

'Become a dice person.'

She lifted her head and looked up ~~at~~ ~~my~~ ~~eye~~ slowly and  
without emotion.

'What?'

'Become a diceperson,' I repeated.

'What do you mean?'

'I,' I leaned forward with appropriate gravity, 'am the Dice  
Man.'

She smiled slightly and looked away and to the side.

'I don't know what you're talking about.'

'You believe that each of your desires is as arbitrary, mean-  
ingless and trivial as the next?'

'Yes.'

'In some sense it makes absolutely no difference what you  
do or don't do?'

'That's exactly it.'

'Then why not let the flip of dice - chance - decide what  
you do?'

She looked up again.



'A healthy skepticism is an essential ingredient of genuine religion.'

'Yes, Father,' she said, still smiling.

I leaned back in my chair.

'Maybe I ought to preach to you.' I flipped a die onto the desk between us. It said yes to the lecture. I frowned.

'I'm listening,' she said as I continued my pause.

'This may sound Father Forbesish, but who am I to question the will of the Die?' I stared at her and we both looked solemn. 'Christ's message is clear: you must lose yourself to save yourself. You must give up personal, worldly desires, become poor in spirit. By surrendering your personal will to the whim of the die you are practicing precisely that self-abnegation prescribed in the scriptures.'

She looked at me blankly as if listening but not understanding.

'Do you see,' I went on, 'that the only selfless action is one not dictated by the self?'

She frowned.

'I can see that following the dice might be selfless. But I thought the Church wanted us to overcome sinfulness on our own.'

I tipped forward and stretched forth an arm to take one of Terry's little hands in my own. I felt - and naturally looked - totally sincere in what I was saying.

'Listen carefully, Terry. What I'm about to say concerns the wisdom of the world's great religions. If a man overcomes sin he calls sinfulness by his own willpower, he overcomes his pride, which, according to even the Bible is the foundation stone of sin. Only when sin is overcome by some external force does the man realize his own insignificance. Only then is pride eliminated. As long as you strive at an internal war for the good, you will either have failure - and an accompanying guilt - or pride, which is simply the basic form of sin. Guilt or pride: those are the gifts of self. The only relief lies in having faith.'

'But faith in what?' she asked.

'Faith in God,' I answered.

She looked puzzled.

'But what happened to the dice?' she asked.

'Look. I'm going to read a passage to you from a sacred book. Listen carefully.' I reached into my desk and brought



And "have you commanded the morning since your days began?"

"Have the gates of death been revealed to you?"

On and on God rubs it in to poor Job, but stylishly – in the most beautiful poetry in the world – and Job realizes that he has been wrong in complaining and questioning. His last words to the Lord are:

"I know that thou canst do all things, and that no purpose of thine can be thwarted . . .

Therefore I despise myself, and repent in dust and ashes."

I paused, and Terry and I looked silently at each other for several moments.

'God can do all things,' I went on. 'No purpose of His can ever be thwarted. Never.'

'Yes,' she replied.

'We must despise ourselves and lose our selves if we are to be saved.'

'Yes.'

'God sees the tiniest sparrow fall.'

'Yes.'

'The tiniest die tumble upon the table.'

'Yes.'

'Ye will always know what options you have given to the Die.'

'Yes.'

'Terry, the reason you must have faith in the Die is simple.'

'Yes.'

'The Die is God.'

'The Die is God,' she said.

## Chapter Thirty-two

I was sitting at a board meeting of Queensborough State Hospital one Wednesday evening that spring, when the idea of Centers for Experiments in Total Random Environments came to me. Fifteen old men, all doctors, Ph.D's and millionaires, were seated around a huge, rectangular table discussing plumbing expansion, salary scales, medication charts and rights-of-way, while the patients in the square mile around us settled ever more comfortably into their various defined stupors. In the middle of doing a doodle of a multi-armed, multi-legged, multi-headed Shiva, whammo! It hit me: a Dice Center, an institution to convert people into random men. I suddenly saw a short-term total environment of such overwhelming impact that the principles and practices of the dicelife would be infused after a few weeks to the same degree that they had in me after many, many months. I saw a society of dicepeople. I saw a new world.

Old man Cobblestone, our tall, dignified chairman, was speaking with great deliberation about the intricacies of Queensborough law regarding rights of appropriation; six pipes, three cigars and five cigarettes were giving the green-walled room a milky, underwater effect; a young doctor (forty-six) beside me had been wiggling his foot in the same motion for forty minutes without pause. Pens lay dormant by paper except for mine: the sole doodler. Yawns were smothered into coughs or hidden behind pipes. Cobblestone gave way to Dr. Wink on the inefficiency of bureaucratic systems in dealing with plumbing problems and suddenly, leaping at me from the seven arms, six legs and three heads of Shiva, was the idea of the Dice Center.

I took my green die from my vest pocket and gave it a fifty-fifty chance that I would create such an institute. It said 'yes.' I stifled a scream. Whatever sound emerged slowed but did not stop the wiggling foot beside me. Four heads turned minutely toward me then back respectfully to Dr. Wink. I was ablaze with my idea. I cast the die a second time on the doodle pad.

'Gentlemen!' I said loudly and I shoved back my chair and stood. I towered over Dr. Wink, who stood just opposite me

staring at me openmouthed. The others all turned to me respectfully. Foot-wiggler wiggled on.

'Gentlemen,' I said again, groping for the right words. 'Another sewer will only permit us to handle the shit better; it won't solve anything.'

'That's true,' a voice said encouragingly and several heads nodded.

'If we are to fulfill our duties as trustees we must have a vision of an institution which will change our patients and send them into the world as free men.' I was speaking slowly and pompously and I earned two nods and a yawn.

'As Ezra Pound wrote in a late poem, a mental hospital is a total institution: it engulfs each patient with a consistency of rule, habit and attitude which effectively isolates him from the more unpredictable problems of life in the outside world. A patient can adjust successfully to hospital life because he can count on its limiting its horrors to certain predictable patterns. The outside world holds no such hope for him. He is thus often able to adjust to hospital life and yet be frightened footless by the thought of having to leave. We have effectively prepared our patients to live adequately in the mental hospital and no place else.'

'Is this to the point?' old Cobblestone asked from his seat at the head of the table.

'Oh it is, sir. It is,' I said a bit more quickly. Then with dignity: 'I have a dream. A vision: we want to prepare our patients to fulfill themselves happily in all environments, to free the individual from the need to lock himself away from challenge and change. We -'

'This ... but, Dr. Rhinehart,' Dr. Wink stammered uncertainly.

'We want to create a world of adult children without fear. We want the multiplicity built into each one of us by our anarchic and contradictory society to break free. We want people to greet each other on the street and not know who is who and *not care*. We want freedom from individual identity. Freedom from security and stability and coherence. We want a community of creators, a monastery for joy-filled madmen.'

'What are you talking about?' Old man Cobblestone said firmly. He was standing.

'For Christ's sake, Luke, sit down,' Dr. Mann said. Heads turned to each other and then back to me.





it in my vest pocket and I left. I learned later that an entirely new sewage disposal system was rejected by unanimous vote and a system of temporary stop-gap repairs initiated to the satisfaction of no one.

As the normal, healthy, neurotic reader knows, one of the chief delights of life is daydreaming. After careful study of my own fantasies and those of hundreds of dicestudents met in dice therapy, I have noted that our dreams at any moment act as a block or a boost to our playing different roles. Moreover, I have discovered that about every four years from childhood until death the average man changes the goals of his daydreams and that these changes evolve in a remarkably predictable pattern. Since all the dreams are in a way related to power, I am modestly suggesting that the phenomena be called the Rhinehart Power Pattern for Men.

Daydreams begin sometime in the child's first decade, usually around the age of eight or nine. At this age the boy inevitably projects himself in terms of raw power. Frequently he is faster than a speeding bullet, more powerful than a locomotive and can leap buildings at a single bound. He becomes the Ghenghis Khan of the fourth grade, the Attila the Hun of the local shopping center, the General George Patton of Cub Scout Local 216. His parents are being tortured to death in a horribly creative way: for example, over some tremendous fire at the end of sharpened spears they are being fried as marshmallows. Sometimes the child arrives in time to save his parents; sometimes, in fact most times, he arrives just too late and, after demolishing the villains, concentrates his imagination on himself marching in the middle of a giant state funeral procession bathed in tears. The procession is attacked by the enemy and he leaps with his sword . . .

By the age of thirteen the scene has usually shifted to Yankee Stadium, where the boy, playing for the hopeless Yankees, with the bases loaded, two outs and his team trailing by three runs in the last half of the ninth inning in the seventh game of the World Series, manages to stroke a 495-foot drive off the highest part of the fence in right center field and, with a fantastic flash around the bases and an impossible headfirst slide, just touches home plate with the extended uncut fingernail of his left pinky. In December, late in the fourth quarter and his team trailing by five points he runs back an intercepted pass 109 yards, carrying fourteen men over the goal line on his back, eleven opposition players, one incompetent referee and

two fans who are already trying to congratulate him. In the spring, with two seconds left to win the game he sinks a one-handed jump shot from the foul line, his own foul line.

In the world of sport, girls are absent, but by the age of sixteen or seventeen the stroke of a baseball has been replaced by other strokes, and the only ones intercepting passes are female. The boy has become a man, and the man is commander-in-chief of a harem. Here things go on beyond the wildest imagination of anyone – except that of the boy doing the dreaming. A woman, panting helplessly, flings her nude body onto the hero, who, puffing nonchalantly on a Corsican cigarette and tastefully sipping a glass of rare New York State wine, and steering his Aston-Martin at 165 miles per hour down a rarely used road in the Alps, manages to give the girl the most exciting love experience of her life. If a male at the age of seventeen is sometimes once again Atilla the Hun it is in order to round up the conquered Roman women and, twirling his sword and his mustache, choose fifteen or sixteen to spend the night with him. If he once again scores the winning touchdown, it is in order to walk dramatically into the senior prom, limping badly and trailing blood along the floor behind him like a leaky oil truck, and watch the women melt into gooey syrup at the sight of him.

But by the age of twenty-one our male is either engaged, married or sated; the world he wants to rule is a new world – he has become Horatio Alger. With grim determination and uncanny acuity he invests fifty-six dollars in the stock market and after buying and selling with cool nonchalance over a period of six months, finally sells out, pocketing a cool \$4,862,927.33. When the board of General Motors is panicked by the threat of disarmament he calmly presents his invention of an inexpensive jet sportscar built in the shape of a Polaris missile and getting fifty miles per gallon of jet fuel. In three weeks he is on the covers of *Time*, *Fortune* and *Success*!

But in the next few years he is earning a modest salary as second clerk at Pierce, Perkins and Poof and is upset at the injustice and hypocrisy that exist in the world: a world in which some men are athletic stars, James Bonds and millionaires and he is not; he is morally appalled. In his dreams he recreates the world, righting all wrongs, eliminating suffering, redistributing wealth, redistributing women, ending all wars. He becomes a reincarnation of Gautama By ~~Jesus~~ *Christ*





## Chapter Thirty-four

I had only one session with Eric Cannon to try to introduce him to dice therapy, because he and his father had reached some kind of agreement whereby Eric was to be released three days later. He was naturally keyed up about leaving and didn't listen carefully as I began a Socratic dialogue to get him into dice therapy. Unfortunately, the Socratic method entails a second person at least willing to grunt periodically and since Eric remained absolutely mute I gave up and told him in a twenty-minute lecture what a dicelife was all about. He became quite alert. When I'd finished he shook his head from side to side slowly.

'How do you stay loose, Doc?' he asked. 'How do you keep yourself on *that* side of the desk?'

'What do you mean?'

'How come they don't lock you up?'

I smiled.

'I am a professional man,' I answered.

'A professional loony. Giving psychotherapy.' He shook his head again. 'Poor Dad. He thought I was being cured.'

'The concept of the dicelife doesn't fascinate you?'

'Of course it does. You've turned yourself into a sort of computer like our air forces uses in Vietnam. Only instead of trying to kill the maximum number of the enemy, you program yourself to drop your bombs at random.'

'You miss the point. Since there is no real enemy, all of life's wars are games, and the dicelife permits a variety of war games instead of the continual sluggish trench warfare of the typical life.'

'"There is no enemy,"' he quoted quietly, looking at the floor in front of him. '"There is no enemy." If there's one thing that makes me want to puke more than anything else it's people who think there is no enemy. Your dicelife is a hundred times as sick as my father even. He's blind, so he's got an excuse, but *you*! "No enemy!"' And Eric writhed in his chair, his face distorted with tension. He twisted his muscular body upward until he was standing, his neck still rolling tensely, his eyes on the ceiling. Clenching his fists he finally held himself reasonably quiet.

'You big fool,' he said. 'This world is a madhouse with killers

loose, torturers, sick depraved sadists running churches, corporations, countries. It could be different, could be better, and you sit on your lump of fat and toss dice.'

I didn't say anything since I was not in the mood for a wrestling match and was, as I listened, for some reason feeling guilty.

'You *know* this hospital is a farce, but tragic, suffering - a tragic farce. You *know* there are nuts running this place - nuts! - not even counting *you*! - that makes most inmates look like Ozzie and Marriat and David and Ricky. You *know* what American racism is. You *know* what the war in Vietnam is. And you toss dice! You toss dice!!'

He banged both fists down on the desk before me two, three, four times, his long hair falling forward at each blow like a black mantilla. Then he stopped.

'I'm leaving, Doc,' he said to me calmly. 'I'm going out into the world and try to make it better. You can stay here and drop your random bombs.'

'Just a minute, Eric.' I stood up. 'Before you go -'

'I'm leaving. Thanks for the pot, thanks for the silences, thanks even for the games, but don't say another word about tossing your fucking dice, or I'll kill you.'

'Eric ... I'm .. You're ...'

He left.



Dr. Rhinehart should have known when Dr. Mann summoned him to his office at QSH that there was trouble. And seeing old Cobblestone erect and solemn as he entered made Dr. Rhinehart certain there was trouble. Dr. Cobblestone is tall and thin and gray-haired, and Dr. Mann is short and plump and balding, but their facial expressions were identical: stern, firm, severe. Being called to a director's office at QSH reminded Rhinehart of being summoned to the principal's office at age eight for winning money off sixth graders at craps. His problems hadn't changed much.

'What's this about dice, young man?' Dr. Cobblestone asked sharply, leaning forward in his chair and banging once noisily on the floor the cane he held upright between his legs. He was the senior director of the hospital.

'Dice?' asked Dr. Rhinehart, a puzzled expression on his face. He was wearing blue jeans, a white T-shirt and sneakers, a dice decision which had made Dr. Mann pale when he had entered the office. Dr. Cobblestone had not seemed to notice.

'I think we ought to take things in the order you suggested earlier,' Dr. Mann said to his co-director.

'Ah yes. Yes, indeed.' Dr. Cobblestone banged his cane again as if it were some accepted signal for the restarting of a game. 'What's this we've heard about your using prostitutes and homosexuals in your sex research?'

Dr. Rhinehart didn't answer immediately but looked intently from one stern face to another. He said quietly:

'The research will be detailed in our report. Is there anything wrong?'

'Dr. Felloni says she has withdrawn entirely from the project,' said Dr. Mann.

'Ahh. She's back from Zurich?'

'She states she withdrew because subjects were being asked to commit immoral acts,' said Dr. Cobblestone.

'The subjects of the experiment was sexual change.'

'Were the subjects asked to commit immoral acts?' Dr. Cobblestone continued.

'The instructions made it clear that they didn't have to do anything they didn't want to.'

'Dr. Felloni reports that the project encouraged young people to fornicate,' said Dr. Mann neutrally.

'She should know. She helped me draw up the instructions.'

'Does the project encourage young people to fornicate?' asked Dr. Cobblestone.

'And old people t- Look, I think perhaps you ought to ask to have a copy of my research report when it's finished.'

The two stern faces had not relaxed, and Dr. Cobblestone went on:

'One of your subjects claims that he was raped.'

'That's true,' replied Dr. Rhinehart. 'But our investigation indicated that he either fantasized or prevaricated the rape to suppress his active unconscious participation in the act of which he complains.'

'What's that?' said Dr. Cobblestone, irritably cupping an ear at Dr. Rhinehart.

'He enjoyed being laid and is lying about the rape.'

'Oh. Thank you.'

'You realize, Luke,' said Dr. Mann, 'that in letting you use some of our patients here at QSH for your research that we are legally and morally responsible for what occurs in that research.'

'I understand.'

'Certain attendants and nurses have reported that a large number of patients were volunteering for your sex research project and have claimed that prostitutes were being supplied to the patients.'

'You can read my report when it's done.'

Dr. Cobblestone banged his cane a third time.

'A report has reached us that you yourself participated in ... as ... as ... in this experiment.'

'Naturally.'

'Naturally?' asked Dr. Mann.

'I participated in the experiment.'

'But our report stated that ...' Dr. Cobblestone's face grew red with his exasperation at not finding the right words. '... that you interacted with the subjects ... sexually.'

'Ahh,' said Dr. Rhinehart.

'Well?' asked Dr. Mann.

'Some neurotic young person I presume is the author of this slander?' said Dr. Rhinehart.

'Yes, yes,' said Dr. Cobblestone quickly.



'And I myself am not blind.'

'Ahh.'

'Batman over the telephone is not my idea of a joke.'

There was a silence.

'Your behavior has been undignified and unprofessional,' said Dr. Cobblestone.

Silence.

'You can read my report when it's done,' said Dr. Rhinehart finally.

Silence.

'Your report?' asked Dr. Cobblestone.

'I'm writing an article on the variety of human response to socially eccentric behavior.'

'Yes, yes, I see,' said Dr. Cobblestone.

'My hypothesis is -'

'No more, Luke,' said Dr. Mann.

'Pardon?'

'No more. You've just about convinced everyone but Jake that you're splitting apart. He alone has faith -'

'My hypothesis is -'

'No more. Your friends have protected you all they're going to. Either back into the old Luke Rhinehart or you're finished as a psychiatrist.'

Dr. Cobblestone arose solemnly.

'And if you wish to bring up your idea for some sort of new center to help our patients you must have it placed on the agenda *before* our meeting.'

'I understand,' said Dr. Rhinehart, also standing.

'No, more, Luke,' said Dr. Mann.

Dr. Rhinehart understood.



She smiled, slightly, lovingly, but with a tear running down one side of her face.

'Luke,' she said, and she paused for several seconds looking into my eyes. 'Why have you been acting so strangely for so long now?'

'Ah Lil,' I began, 'I'd like to tell you . . . ' and I stopped.

'I know you aren't really unbalanced,' she went on. 'It's some . . . *theory* you're working on, isn't it?'

The warmth I'd been feeling froze, the lover solidified to stone. Sitting mute, hand being held, was a wary dice man.

'Please tell me,' she said.

She was wetting her lips and squeezing my hand.

'Luke, we're together again. I feel so whole, so full of love for you, yet . . . I know that tomorrow, the next day, you may change again. Everything that has made these last few days so sweet will disappear. And I don't know why. And I *won't* know why.'

Maybe Lil could become the Dice Woman. It sounded like the name of a villainess on the Batman show but it offered me at the moment the only rationalization I could find for betraying the secret of my life and permitting me to hold Lil's happiness and love. I wavered. The band downstairs was playing a waltz. It wasn't too modern a ski resort.

'I - ' I started. The dice man still fought.

'Tell me,' she said.

'I've been experimenting, Lil,' I began for a third time, 'with practicing eccentric behavior, unusual roles, attitudes, emotions - in order to discover the variety of human nature.' I paused: wide-eyed she waited for what I was going to say. Narrow-eyed, so did I. I reached to my side and turned off the light again. Our faces, separated by only three feet, were still quite visible in the moonlight.

'I didn't want to tell you until . . . I had learned whether the experiment had value: you might have rejected me, fought the experiment, ended our love.'

'Oh no I wouldn't.'

'I knew a moment would come when I could tell you everything. Last week I decided to end the experiment for a while so we could be together again.'

Her grip on my hand was frightening.

'I would have gone along,' she said. 'I would have, sweetheart. Those asses think you're losing your mind. I would have



She down-shifted from sobs to sniffles, then left me to trot to the bathroom. When she returned to her same spot on the bed with her face and hair tidied up, I was surprised to see that she was looking at me coldly.

'Have you kept a written record of these experiments?' she asked.

'Of some. And I've written brief essays of analysis of various hypotheses I've been testing.'

'Have you experimented with me?'

'Of course I have, honey. Since it's *me* I experiment with, and me lives with you, you've been affected by many of the experiments.'

'I mean have you directly experimented ... tried to get me to do things?'

'I ... no, no, I haven't.'

'Have you experimented with sex? With other women?'

Bingo!

I hesitated.

My male friends, attention. There are some questions which demand any answer *except* hesitation. 'Do you love me?' for example, is not a question; it is intended as a stimulus in the stimulus-response sequence "Do-you-love-me?-Oh-my-precious-yes." 'Did you sleep with her?' demands a yes-or-no answer immediately: hedging implies guilt. 'Have you experimented with other women?' demanded an immediate answer of 'Yes, of course, honey, and it's made me closer to you than ever.' This would bring tears, slaps, revilings, withdrawal and eventually, curiosity and reconciliation. Hesitation on the other hand ...

Hesitation brought Lil leaping to her feet.

'You Goddam bastard,' she said.

'Oh my precious -'

'Don't touch me.'

'You don't even know what the experiments were.'

'I know your mind. I know ... oh my God ... I know ... Arlene! You and Arlene!' She was rigid and trembling.

'Honey, honey, honey, you're blowing up about nothing. My experiments didn't include infidelity -'

'It *has*! They didn't. I'm no fool. I'm no fool,' she shouted and, sobbing, crumpled on to the couch.

'Oh, I'm such a fool,' she moaned. 'such a fool.'

I went over and tried to comfort her. She ignored me. After another minute's crying she got up and went into the bath-



room. When I followed about two minutes later the door hooked closed.

Now remember, my friends, I was still supposed to be playing the lover. For seven days I had *been* the lover, at one time the role; now I was only artificially trying to go through the proper motions and emotions. The love was dead, but the love was commanded to live on.

I knocked and called and finally received a 'Go away'; unoriginal but, I fear, sincere. My impulse was to do just that, but my mind warned me that real lovers never leave their beloved in such cases except to blow out their brains or to get drunk. Considering the alternatives I threw my shoulder against the door twice and broke in.

Lil was sitting on the edge of the tub with a pair of scissors in her hand; she looked up at me dully when I stumbled in. A quick scrutiny indicated she had not slashed anything.

'What are you doing?' I asked.

'I thought I'd mend your pants, if you don't mind.' Beside her, prosaically enough, was, in fact, some thread and the pants I'd ripped down the backside on the slopes that afternoon.

'Mend my pants?'

'You have your experiments and I have ... [she almost started crying again] my art projects. Pants and ... I'm being pathetic and maudlin.'

She placed the pants on the rim of the tub and turned on the water in the sink and began scrubbing her face. When she'd finished, she brushed her teeth. I stood in the doorway, trying to marshal my creative faculties to tell a tall tale.

'Lil, an hour ago we had something which we can and will have again. But you've got to know all about my experiments

—'

She looked up at me foaming at the mouth, toothbrush in hand.

'I'll listen to it all, Luke, to every scientific word but not now. Just not now.'

'You may not want to listen, but I *must* tell you. This hour is so important, our love is too —'

—'

Important to let a night go by with this rock between us.'

'I'm going to bed,' she said as she left the bathroom and to undress.

—'

en go, but listen.'

She threw off her clothes on to her dresser, got into a nightgown and went to bed. She pulled the covers up so that only the top of her head was showing and turned her back to me. I began lumbering back and forth at the foot of the bed. I was trying to prepare a speech. I wanted to document my series of harmless, faithful-husband experiments but was floundering in the sea of harmful, faithless-husband facts. I didn't know what to do.

I knew door-slamming only postponed the ultimate confrontation and further soothing necessitated my saying something, an act I wished to avoid for a decade or two. Moreover, modest spiritual caresses would leave her free to continue thinking, and thinking, when you are guilty of something (and what man dare cast the first stone?), is dangerous and must be stopped. Such soothing would also encourage her to consider herself the guiltless and abused party, a truth best left unconsidered.

I paced like a starving rat back and forth at the foot of the bed, staring at the food I wanted (Lil) and at the electric grid which would make the eating painful (Lil). Irritably I threw back the covers. Her nightgown was twisted tightly around her and pulled almost to the knees. My blood, seeing that delicious, plump, helpless rear, sent representatives racing with the news to the capillaries of my penis.

I retrieved the scissors from the floor and with stealth and delicacy snipped the heavier material at the neck of her nightgown and with a swift yank tore it from top to bottom. Lil twisted upward screaming and clawing.

The further details, while perhaps of anthropological value, would read something like the dry documentation of some invasion of a Japanese Pacific island during the Second World War: circling movements; advance of right thigh to position 'V'; repulse of fingernail attack on left flank; main artillery piece to attack position; main artillery piece forced to withdraw when caught in classic pincers movement by two enemy flanks, etc.

Forced carnal knowledge, whatever else it may be, is good physical exercise and represents meaningful variation on normal marital relations. As pleasure, however, it has its limitations. For myself, I was so distracted that night by scratches, bites and screams, and by wondering whether one could be arrested for violating one's wife (was pinching a felony or a misdemeanor?), that I must warn male readers that although



## Chapter Thirty-seven

Dr. Rhinehart should have known when Mrs. Ecstein summoned him to her living room couch that Wednesday that there was trouble. They hadn't met in her apartment since she had begun therapy with him. After letting him in she seated herself sedately on the couch, folded her hands and looked at the floor. Her mannish gray suit, her glasses and her hair tied back severely in a bun, made her look strikingly like a door-to-door purveyor of Baptist religious tracts.

'I'm going to have a baby,' she said quietly.

Dr. Rhinehart sat down at the opposite end of the couch, leaned back and mechanically crossed his legs. He looked blankly at the wall opposite him, on which hung an ancient lithograph of Queen Victoria.

'I'm happy for you, Arlene,' he said.

'This is now the second straight month I've missed my period.'

'I'm happy.'

'I asked the Die what I should name it and gave it thirty-six options and the Die named it Edgar.'

'Edgar.'

'Edgar Ecstein.'

They sat there quietly not looking at each other.

'I gave ten chances to Lucius but the dice chose Edgar.'

'Ahh.'

Silence.

'What if it's a girl?' Dr. Rhinehart asked after a while.

'Edgarina.'

'Ahh.'

'Edgarina Ecstein.'

Silence.

'Are you happy about it, Arlene?'

'Yes.'

Silence.

'It hasn't been decided yet who the father is,' Mrs. Ecstein said.

'You don't know who the father is?' asked Dr. Rhinehart, sitting up.



'I'm happy for you, Arlene,' he said and collapsed slowly back in a heap against the couch, his blank eyes swiveling automatically to the blank wall opposite, on which hung only the ancient lithograph of Queen Victoria. Smiling.

## Chapter Thirty-eight

Unfortunately for normal old Luke Rhinehart and his friends and admirers, the dice kept rolling and rolling. June turned out to be National Role-Playing Month and a bit too much. I was ordered to consult the Die regularly about varying the person I was from hour to hour, or day to day or week to week. I was expected to expand my role playing, perhaps even to test the limits of the malleability of the human soul.

Could there exist a Totally Random Man? Could a single human so develop his capabilities that he might vary his soul from hour to hour at whim? Might a man be an infinitely multiple personality? or rather, like the universe according to some theorists, a steadily expanding multiple personality, one only to be contracted at death? And then, even then, who knows?

At dawn of the second day I gave the dice six optional persons, one of whom I would try to be during the whole day. I was trying to create only simple, non socially upsetting options. The six were: Molly Bloom, Sigmund Freud, Henry Miller, Jake Ecstein, a child of seven and the old pre-diceman Dr. Lucius Rhinehart.

The dice first chose Freud, but by the end of the day I had come to feel that being Sigmund Freud must have been something of a bore. I was aware of many unconscious sources of motivation where I usually overlooked them, but having seen them I didn't feel I had gained too much. I tried to examine my unconscious resistances to being Freud and uncovered the sort of thing Jake was good at in analysis: rivalry with the Father, fear of unconscious aggression being revealed: but I didn't find my insights convincing, or rather I didn't find them relevant. I might have an 'oral personality' but this knowledge didn't help me change myself as much as did a single flip of the die.

On the other hand, when I read of a man who killed himself by slashing his wrists I immediately noted the sexual symbolism of the cutting of the limbs. I began thinking of other modes of suicide: throwing oneself into the sea; putting a pistol in one's mouth and pulling the trigger; crawling into an oven and turning on the gas; throwing oneself under a

train - All seemed to have obvious sexual symbolism and be necessarily connected with the psychosexual development of the patient. I created the excellent aphorism: Tell me the manner in which a patient commits suicide and I'll tell you how he can be cured.

The next day I scratched Freud from my list, replaced him with a 'slightly psychotic, aggressively anti-Establishment hippie' and cast a die: it chose Jake Ecstein.

Jake I could do very well. He was a real part of me and his superficial mannerisms and speech patterns I could easily imitate. I wrote half an article for the *Journal of Abnormal Psychology* analyzing the dice man concept from an orthodox Jakeian point of view and felt marvelous. During my analytic hour with Jake I entered so completely into his way of thinking that at the end he announced that we had covered more ground in this one session than in our previous two and a half months together. In a later article he wrote about my analysis 'The Case of the Six-Sided Man' - (Jake's reputation will be eternal on the basis of his titles alone), he discussed this analytical hour in detail and attributes its success to the accidental discovery of a rarely read article by Ferenczi which he stumbled upon the night before lying open to a key page under his bathroom sink and which gave him the key 'which began to unlock the door to the six-sided cube.' He was ecstatic.

The dice rolled on and rolled me from role to role to role in a schizophrenic kaleidoscope of dramatic play. Life became like a series of bit parts in a bad movie, with no script, no director, and with actresses and actors who didn't know their lines or their roles. I did most of my role playing away from people who knew me, for reasons which are obvious.

I can remember only vaguely what I did and said in those days; images are clearer than dialogues: I as Oboko the Zen master sitting mostly mute and smiling while a young graduate student tries to question me about psychoanalysis and the meaning of life: I as a child of seven riding a bicycle through Central Park, staring at the ducks in the pond, sitting cross-legged to watch an old Negro fishing, buying bubble gum and ballooning out a big one, racing another cyclist on my bike and crashing and scratching my knee and crying much to the bewilderment of the passersby: 240-pound crybabies being a rarity.





## Chapter Thirty-nine

Once upon a time Dr. Rhinehart dreamt he was a bumblebee, a bumblebee buzzing and flitting around, happy with himself and doing as he pleased. He didn't believe he was Dr. Rhinehart. Suddenly he felt that he had awakened, and he was old Luke Rhinehart lying in bed beside the beautiful woman Lil. But he didn't know if he was Dr. Rhinehart who had dreamt he was playing the role of a bumblebee, or a bumblebee dreaming he was Dr. Rhinehart. He didn't know, and his head was buzzing. After several minutes he shrugged: 'Perhaps I'm actually Hubert Humphrey dreaming I'm a bumblebee dreaming of being Dr. Rhinehart.'

He paused for several more seconds and then rolled over and snuggled up to his wife.

'In any case,' he said to himself, 'in this dream of being Dr. Rhinehart I'm glad I'm in bed with a woman and not a bumblebee.'







move pigeon long way away and move the home. Pigeon gets very worried.'

'What problems have you encountered?' I asked.

'Ve lose pigeons.'

Jake laughed, but when I glanced at him he cut it short and squinted nervously at me. Dr. Krum stroked his beard, focused his eyes intently on my knees and went on.

'Ve lose pigeons. It is nothing. Ve have many pigeons, but chickens could not fly. Pigeons are smart but ve may have to remove their wings,' he frowned.

Dr. Mann joined us, glass in hand, Jake asked a question and I removed my watchcase and glanced at the single die for a second role.

The tall, gaunt Mr. Thornton arrived, dispensing tiny hors d'oeuvres, crackers with minute pearl-like deposits on them like fish eggs waiting to be fertilized. Each of my three colleagues mechanically took one, Jake downing his in a swallow, Dr. Mann briefly holding his under his nose and then chewing it for the next ten minutes and Dr. Krum taking an intense experimental bite, like a chicken pecking at seed.

'Dr. Rhinehart?' Mr. Thornton asked, holding the silver tray and its obscene deposits up toward my chest where I could see it.

'Unununun,' I vibrated noisily, my lower lip hanging sloppily and my eyes attempting an animal vacancy. With my huge right paw I swept up and clutched six or seven crackers, almost upsetting the tray, and stuffed them into my mouth, pieces falling in a splendid dry waterfall down my shirtfront to the floor.

A flicker of human surprise crossed for a millisecond the crased face of Mr. Thornton as he looked into my vacant gaze and watched me chew ineptly, a bit of moist semi-chewed cracker dangling briefly from my lip before falling forever to the deep brown rug below.

'Unununun,' I vibrated again.

'Thank you, sir,' said Mr. Thornton and turned to the ladies.

Dr. Krum was emphatically stabbing the air in front of Dr. Mann's stomach as if performing some magic rite before making an incision.

'Proof! Proof! They do not know the meaning of the word. They raise money with bribes, they are bankers, barbarians, businessmen, beasts, they -'

'Shit, who cares?' interrupted Jake. 'If they want to get rich



young psychologist from Harvard I knew and liked. and the other was his date, a plump, pleasant blonde with a cream-smooth complexion — a Miss Welish. She reached out her hand when she was introduced to me, and when I failed to grasp it, she blushed. Looking at her I said: 'Ununununun.' She blushed again.

'Hi, Luke, how's it going?' asked Fred Boyd. I turned to him blankly.

'How did Herder do with his grant application to Stonewall?' Dr. Mann asked Fred.

'Not so good,' Fred answered. 'They wrote that their funds are tied up this year and —'

'Is that *the* Dr. Krum?' a voice asked at my elbow.

I looked down at Miss Welish and then over at Dr. Krum. The crumb was still in his beard, although better hidden now.

'Blinnh,' I asked.

'Fred thinks so too,' Miss Welish said and she turned us aside from the other conversation. 'He says one reason he admires you is that you don't stand for any nonsense.'

Impulsively I left one great paw and dangled it loosely over her shoulder. She was wearing a silver, high-necked dress and the shimmering scales were rough against my wrist.

'I beg your pardon,' she said, and when she backed away my paw slid down over a breast and swung briefly like a pendulum at my side.

She blushed and glanced quickly at the three men talking nearby.

'Fred says that Dr. Krum is very good at what he does, but that what he does isn't really important. What do you think?'

'Unn,' I said loudly and stamped one giant foot.

'Oh me too. I don't like animal experimenters myself. I've been doing social work in Staten Island now for two years and there's so much to be done with *people*.'

She looked now over at the couch where Dr. Felloni, the elderly lady and the thin old big deal were talking: Miss Welish seemed to be relaxing in my company.

'Even here, in this very room, there are people whose lives are unfulfilled, people who need help.'

I was silent, but a bit of drool escaped from my lower lip and began its pilgrimage down my shirt front.

'Unless we can learn to relate to each other,' Miss Welish went on, 'to be *aware* of each other, all the chicken cures in the world won't help.'





ache. Can't we go someplace for a few minutes where we can be alone?' I edged her away toward a hallway which I knew led to Dr. Mann's office.

'Oh talk talk talk. It gets so sickening after a while.'

'Let me show you Dr. Mann's office. He has some fascinating illustrated books on primitive sexual practices.'

'No pictures of chickens?' and she laughed happily at herself, and I laughed too. Dr. Felloni nodded her head at us as we passed the couch, and Jake squinted over an Important Person's shoulder as we passed behind the Krum group and Arlene jiggled her breasts slightly and smiled and we were down the hall and into Dr. Mann's office. I heard a shrill squeak when we entered and saw then that Dr. Boggles and Miss Reingold were seated on the floor with a pair of green dice between them, and Boggles, with two-thirds of his clothes removed, was just reaching triumphantly to remove Miss Reingold's (smiling triumphantly) blouse.

As we backed out, Miss Welish said: 'Oh that's disgusting. In Dr. Mann's study! That's disgusting.'

'You're right, Joya, let's go to the bathroom.'

'The bathroom?'

'It's down this way.'

'What are you talking about?'

'A place to talk privately.'

'Oh.' She had stopped in the middle of the hall now and her hands were both clenching her drink.

'No,' she said. 'I want to get back to the party.'

'Joya, all I want to do is use your beautiful body. It won't take long.'

'What will we talk about?'

'What? We'll talk about Harry Stack Sullivan's theory of post-operative malaise. Come on.'

As she still remained immobile I realized I was being entirely too middle-class for the uninhibited sex maniac the Die certainly had in mind and, when Miss Welish began talking of going back to the living room again, I strode forward, knocked her drink to the floor and tried to kiss her powerfully on the mouth.

The explosion of pain in my balls was so intense that for a moment I thought I had been shot. I was blinded with pain and staggered back against the wall with a thud. With the fierce willpower of a saint I forced my eyes open and saw the shimmering silvery back of Miss Welish returning toward the



I lay back on the bed for a while and stared at the ceiling. I heard voices passing by out in the hall and then only the blurred distant buzz from the living room. The door opened and Lil came in.

'What happened?' she asked sharply. She was immaculately beautiful in her black, low-cut cocktail dress, but her eyes and mouth were set and cold. I looked up at her and felt a hollowness inside me: what a time and a place for this.

'Dr. Krum said you were sick. You disappear with Blondie and then turn up sick. What happened?'

I struggled to a sitting position and dragged my legs off the bed to the floor. I looked up at her.

'It's a long story, Lil.'

'You made a pass at Blondie.'

'Longer than that, much longer.'

'I hate you.'

'Yes. It's inevitable,' I said. 'I'm the Dice Man.'

'Had you met her before? I thought Fred told me he'd just met her himself.'

'I'd never met her before. She was thrown into my path and the dice said take her.'

'The dice? What're you talking about?'

'I am the Dice Man.' Hunched over and disheveled, I'm afraid it wasn't too impressive a moment. We stared at each other, separated by only six feet in the little bedroom off the hallway of Dr. Mann's museum mausoleum. Lil shook her head as if trying to clear it.

'What, if I may ask, is the dice man?'

Dr. Krum and Arlene again appeared, Dr. Krum carrying a black bag similar to those carried by general practitioners in the early nineteenth century.

'You are better?' he said.

'Yes. Thank you. I will rise again.'

'Good, good. I have an anesthetic. You want?'

'No. It won't be necessary. Thanks.'

'What is the dice man, Luke?' Lil repeated. She hadn't moved since entering the room. I saw Arlene start and felt her eyes upon me as I turned back to Lil.

'The Dice Man,' I said slowly, 'is an experiment in changing the personality, in destroying the personality.'

'Is interesting,' Dr. Krum said.

'Go on,' Lil said.



Pain flashed across her face.

'What if I told you that tonight before coming here, in tucking the children in goodnight, in following a theory of mine to show detachment, I had ... I had strangled Larry and Evie?'

There we were opposite each other, an old married couple chatting about the doings of the day.

'If it were done for a ... a useful theory it would be ...'

Greater love hath no man than this: that he lay down his children's lives for his theory.

'You would, of course, kill them if the dice told you to,' Lil said.

'I don't think I'd ever give that particular option into the hands of the dice.'

'Only adultery, theft, fraud and treason.'

'I might give Larry and Evie into the hands of the Die, but myself too.'

She was rocking now on her heels, her hands clenched in front of her, still immaculately beautiful.

'I guess I should be thankful,' she said. 'The mystery is over. But ... but it's not easy to have the death of the man you loved most in the world told to you by ... by his corpse.'

'Interesting point,' I said.

Lil's head jerked back at my reply and her eyes widened slowly until, suddenly, she threw herself on me with a convulsive shriek, pulling my hair and then beating me with her fists. I hunched over to protect myself, but I felt so hollow inside that Lil's blows were like a gentle rain falling on an empty barrel. It occurred to me that it was long past time to consult the Die again. I wasn't interested. I didn't feel interested in anything. The blows stopped and Lil, crying loudly, ran toward the door. Arlene was standing there, looking terrified, and caught Lil in her arms. They disappeared, and I was alone.



## Chapter Forty-two

On the edge of the bed, alone, the party outside seeming to settle into precisely the businesslike buzz it manifested before, Dr. Rhinehart sat hunched over, numbed. There was no retreat now. He was the Dice Man or he was no one. His body knew, although he could not yet be aware consciously, that Luke Rhinehart was now an impossible existence. Numbed, he disobeyed the Die by not consulting the watch for almost ten minutes. Then, having no place else to go, no one else to be, he took out the watch with the die and looked.

Slowly he straightened himself up and, standing, bowed his head in a brief prayer. Then he smoothed down his clothing and his hair and moved toward the party. He wanted first to see his wife, to abase himself before her. He walked down the hall to the living room and from the doorway squinted through the random clusters of faces, looking for her. Those talking and drinking paid him no special attention, but Mrs. Ecstein came up behind him and said that his wife was in Dr. Mann's office.

He followed her down the hall and over the broken glass to the office. He found Dr. Mann and Dr. Ecstein standing awkwardly on either side of his wife, who sat, childlike, on the edge of Dr. Mann's consulting couch.

The sight of her, hunched over and small, her face pale but streaked with smeared eye shadow, her hair in disarray, an ugly man's sweater draped clumsily over her shoulders, knocked Dr. Rhinehart without conscious intention to his knees, with his chest and head too lowering forward until he groveled at his wife's feet.

The room was silent that they could all hear quite distinctly from the centre of the house the ratatattat of Dr. Krum's laughter.

'Forgive me, Lil, I am mad,' Dr. Rhinehart said.

No one spoke.

Dr. Rhinehart raised his head and chest from the floor to look at his wife and he said: 'For what I have done there is no forgiveness in this world; but I am repentant. I... I have been purified... by the hell that I am causing. I...' His eyes suddenly brightened with eagerness 'I feel only love for you and





touched Miss Welish lightly on the breasts and went into the bathroom to her left. Miss Welish watched Mrs. Ecstein leave and then found herself face to face with Dr. Rhinehart again.

'Most beautiful body in the world, baby, except your knee. Let's go.'

She stared at him.

'But here?' she said.

'Here and now, baby, that's all there is.'

He moved around her to the bathroom, held the door open and waited. With a swift backward glance up the empty hallway she walked toward the bathroom.

'You people are really amazing,' she said. 'Are all psychiatrists' parties like this?'

'Only Dr. Mann's,' Dr. Rhinehart said and followed her in.

## Chapter Forty-three

*[Being excerpts from Dr. Ecstein's case history entitled,  
Case of the Six-Sided Man'.]*

After R had erratically broken off his conversation with three psychiatrists, he left the party area. The three discussed the situation briefly and then were joined by Dr. M. After further discussion it was decided that R ought to be taken immediately to a private clinic. M telephoned the — Clinic and asked for an ambulance. M and Dr. E. then went along with Dr. B to locate R.

He was not outside, nor was he in M's office, but it was soon ascertained that he had locked himself in the bathroom. At first the doctors were concerned for R's life, but were reassured by the sound of other voices from the room. He called to those inside, but received no answer. B banged loudly on the door until E warned him it might be dangerous to excite R. For two minutes M tried to talk rationally with the patient but E, B and M heard only grunts in reply. B wanted to break the door down and enter, but M and E urged caution considering R's bulk and strength. An ambulance with attendants would soon arrive. Then female screams were heard within the bathroom, and it was ascertained that the instances of E and B.

The door was broken down. It was disclosed that R had been in the process of raping the two females. The clothes of both were in extreme disarray and R's genitals were exposed and slobbering lascivious. He stood in the center of the room and grunted. He seemed to have regressed to the besotted state. He could answer none of our questions and resisted efforts to separate him from the females only in the most ineffectual way. He had become docile.

Two females seemed in a state of shock and could not resist their delay in calling for help. Whether it was the effect of R's great strength or some inexplicable hypnotic influence determined. B had a different theory. Eventually, B emerged from shock and burst into tears.

'horrible,' said A.

'The things he tried to make us do,' said JW.

R only slobbered and grunted. The doctors had to dress him themselves, since he seemed incapable of it himself. K and M both advanced the hypothesis that the patient had subsided into a catatonic state. E, however, even at this early date, was able to postulate that R's breakdowns were random and sporadic and that a spontaneous remission of symptoms should be expected.

Such was the case. Ten minutes later as all sat quietly and in great fatigue waiting for an ambulance, R began talking again. He apologized sincerely and realistically for his behavior, praised the doctors for the gentle and intelligent way they had handled a difficult situation, reassured them that he was now at last completely himself again, and after twenty minutes or so had most of those present laughing at the whole situation, when abruptly, just as the ambulance arrived, he threw himself on the only woman left in the room. Dr. F, and seemed to be attempting coitus. The attendants and doctor arrived, he was pulled off, an injection was administered and the patient was taken to — Clinic....

Thus, the following day, June 16, E, as his psychiatrist, was able to visit him. It soon became apparent that R was under the illusion that he was a young hippie of extremely sarcastic bent. Although he related to E, it was in a negative, aggressive way. The patient, although in complete contact with reality and often extremely observant, was *not himself*, and thus was still insane.

On June 17 it was reported by the clinic that the patient spent his time in total silence, staring into space and occasionally grunting. He had to be spoon-fed and was unable to control his excretory functions. It seemed that a permanent catatonic state might have been reached.

But R's recuperative powers continued to amaze. On the next day it was reported that he was talking again, relating well to the staff and physicians and requesting reading material, mostly of a religious nature. This last fact naturally worried E, but on June 19, 20 and 21 no new change was reported, so on June 22 E visited R again at the clinic.



experience he had had in Central Park after following the Die and writing a particularly nonsensical article on Theodore Dreiser and the Lyrical Impulse. Two of my new patients visited me regularly during my second week at the clinic and had me continue therapy with them there.

Arlene, too, seemed to grow in dice stature during this crisis period. Her letter explaining what was happening on the home front made me quite proud of her and prepared me for my interviews with Jake. She told me that Jake had taken her confession of infidelity quite calmly but had bawled her out for keeping it all to herself. It seems it was her ethical duty to provide him with as much information as possible about herself and everyone she knew since he could not fulfil his therapeutic duties without honesty and information. She had therefore gone on to tell him about her own and my dicelife and our dice games together. He had taken extensive notes and asked a lot of questions but was very calm. He had ordered her to limit her dicelife to the socially conventional until he had an opportunity to study the situation. She had then suggested that it might be of help to him if he experimented with some of the dice games with her in order to understand her problems and my problems better. He agreed, and they had had the best night together that they had had since high school days. Jake said he found it interesting. Arlene wrote that she would come visit me as soon as the Die said it was okay.

When Jake visited me on June 22 in the early evening I apologized to him immediately for any of my actions in the past which might have hurt him. It so fell that I was in the first day of The Old Pre-D-Day Luke Rhinchart Week – a role I found very hard to play. I told him that by all conventional standards what I had done in seducing his wife was unforgivable, but that I hoped he understood my philosophical aims in following the dice.

'Yeah, Luke,' he said, sitting down in a chair opposite my bed and in front of a lovely barred window overlooking a wall. 'But you're a strange one, got to admit. Tough nut to crack, so to speak.' He took out a small note pad and a pen. 'Like to know more about this dice man life of yours.'

'You're sure, Jake,' I said, 'that there's no, well, no resentment over any of the ways which I may have betrayed you, lied to you or humiliated you?'



'If it can be turned on and off it's not normal human relatedness.' He was looking at me calmly and without expression, whereas I was getting excited.

'But how do you know that normal, uncontrollable human relatedness is more desirable than my switch-button variety?'

He didn't answer. After a while he said: 'Did the dice tell you to tell me?'

'They told Arlene.'

'Did they tell you both to throw some lies in too?'

'No, that was our personal contribution.'

'The dice are wrecking your career.'

'I suppose so.'

'They've ruined your marriage.'

'Naturally.'

'They make it impossible for me or anyone else to rely on anything you say or do from now on.'

'True.'

'They mean that anything you begin may be abandoned right at the point of fruition by a whim of a die.'

'Yes.'

'Including the investigations of the dice man.'

'Ah, Jake, you understand perfectly.'

'I think I do.'

'Why don't you try it too?' I asked warmly.

'It's possible.'

'We could become the Dynamic Dice Doc, dealing dreams and destruction to the pattern-plagued world of modern man.'

'Yes, that's interesting.'

'You're about the only one I know intelligent enough to understand what the Dice Man is really all about.'

'I suppose I am.'

'Well?'

'Have to think it over, Luke. It's a big step.'

'Sure, I understand.'

'It's got to be Oedipal; that damn father of yours.'

'Wha - what?'

'That time when you were three and your mother -'

'Jake! What are you talking about?' I asked loudly and with irritation. 'I've just unfolded the most imaginative new life system in the history of man and you start talking old Freudian mythology.'

'Huh? Oh, I'm sorry,' he said, smiling his professional smile. 'Go ahead.'





## Chapter Forty-five

The pre-D-Day Luke Rhinehart created by the dice for the week of June 22 appeared so conventional, so rational, so ambitious and so interested in psychology that Doctors Ecstein and Mann decided to take a chance and permit me to defend myself at the meeting of the executive committee of PANY on June 30. Jake, while not yet convinced of the soundness of my theory, was increasingly enjoying certain dice exercises to which Arlene was introducing him and wished to be generous. Dr. Mann, not having been informed of the radical nature of my dicelife, was vaguely hopeful that the rational, conventional, ambitious man he talked to during the week of June 22 would still exist on the thirtieth. The executive committee had agreed to my presence because they could find nothing in their bylaws which forbade it.

The charges against me were simple – my theories and practice of dice therapy were incompetent, ridiculous, unethical and of no 'lasting medical value.' Consequently, I should be expelled from PANY and a letter should be sent to the president of the AMA urging that I be forbidden to practice medicine anywhere in the United States or Canada (the southern part of the hemisphere being considered beyond salvation). I looked forward to the meeting as a welcome break from the confinement of the Kolb Clinic.

Then occurred one of those unfortunate accidents which flaw even the most well-ordered dicelife: I absentmindedly gave the dice a foolish option and the Die chose it. When considering what to do about the PANY indictment – to which my residual self was indifferent – the old Luke Rhinehart I was being that week created as an option that if the committee voted to expel me I would cease dice therapy and dice living for one year. I gaily toppled a die onto my hospital bed and lost my gaiety: the Die chose that option.

In so far as anything is certain in this Die-dictated universe, it was certain that the executive committee would find me guilty. Not one of the five members of the committee was likely to be sympathetic. Dr. Weinburger, the chairman, was an ambitious, successful, conventional genius who hated everything that took time away from his glory-producing activities at his Institute for the Study of Hypochondria in the Dying.



wrote articles, practiced speeches and considered what I would best permit me somehow to sway Doctors Cobblestone and Mann to vote against my expulsion. Then my only hope would lie in some accident permitting the erratic old Dr. Moon to also be on my side.

Such dedicated work was possible since I was still in 'The Old Luke Rhinehart Week', but on June 29 it would end and the Die would have to choose a new role or roles for the last two days. Would the Die choose that I switch roles rapidly as at the Krum party? Would it permit me to be my most rational and articulate? Would it tell me to blow the whole thing?

I wouldn't know until the die was cast.



ing was also funny. When I finally frowned, he laughed even harder. 'Enough,' I said loudly, but began to laugh myself.

The old woman with the bushy brows stared at me coldly. The two men at the other table turned their heads. My attendant turned a page at last. The fat man above shook again with laughter, and I laughed harder, my big belly bumping against the table; I was almost out of control. The people stared, even the attendant. At last I stopped.

So did the fat man, although he still smiled, and I felt very close to him. I thought again of the spectacular, nonsensical options that I'd been considering and decided I'd throw them out. The fat man began laughing again. I looked up startled, smiled socially at him and decided that I would instead use all three non-rational options. He laughed harder. With a flush I realized that I would have to abandon the dicelife completely, but the fat man laughed on and was joined by three, four other fat men all pointing at me and laughing joyously.

My mind was filled suddenly with the vision of thousands of fat men sitting up there in that fourth dimension watching the antics of human aspiration and purpose, and laughing – not a single one sober or compassionate or pitying. Our plans, hopes, expectations, and promises, and the realities of the future which they could also see: only a source of laughter. The men (they were both men and women actually, but all fat) often crowded together to look at one particular human whose life seemed to evoke special ironies or humor.

When I realized that neither abandoning the dicelife nor retaining it would end the eternal amusement of the fat people in the sky I felt like a man on some television show who is asked to guess what's behind the green wall. No matter what he guesses, the audience, which can see what is behind the wall while he can't, laughs. All my writhings in the present to find a future which will please me evoke only laughter in the audience in the sky. 'The best laid plans of mice and men gang aft astray,' said Napoleon with a chuckle on his return from Moscow.

I was laughing again with my fat men, and the woman opposite me and my attendant with a finger to his lips were both hissing violent 'shhhhhhes.'

'Look!' I said with a huge smile, and pointed off toward the ceiling and the fourth dimension. 'It's all there,' I went on between chuckles. 'The answer – up there.'

The old woman glanced sternly up at the ceiling, adjusted



## Chapter Forty-seven

The Die is my shepherd ; I shall not want ;  
He maketh me to lie down in green pastures, I lie ;  
He leadeth me beside the still waters, I swim.  
He destroyeth my soul :  
He leadeth me in the paths of righteousness  
For randomness sake.  
Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death,  
I will fear no evil: for Chance is with me ;  
Thy two sacred cubes they comfort me.  
Thou preparest a table before me  
In the presence of mine enemies :  
Thou anointest my head with oil ;  
My cup runneth over.  
Surely goodness and mercy and evil and cruelty shall follow  
me  
All the days of my life:  
And I will dwell in the house of Chance for ever.

— from *The Book of the Die*



## Chapter Forty-eight

The meeting of the executive committee of the Psychoanalytic Association of New York took place early on the afternoon of 30 June, 1969, in a large seminar room at Dr. Weinburger's Institute for the Study of Hypochondria in the Dying. Dr. Weinburger, a bushy-haired, thickset man in his late forties, sat impatiently behind a long table with Doctors Peerman and Cobblestone on one side of him and old Dr. Moon and Dr. Mann on the other. All the gentlemen looked serious and intent except for Dr. Moon, who was sleeping quietly between Chairman Weinburger and Dr. Mann, occasionally sliding slowly sideways to rest against the shoulder of the one, and then, like a pendulum that badly needs oiling, after a hesitation, sliding slowly back across the arc to rest against the shoulder of the other.

The table at which the five sat was so long that they looked more like fugitives huddled together for mutual protection rather than judges. Dr. Rhinehart and Dr. Ecstein, who was present as friend and personal physician, sat on stiff wooden chairs in the middle of the room opposite them. Dr. Ecstein was slumped and squinting, but Dr. Rhinehart was erect and alert, looking extremely professional in a perfectly tailored gray suit and tie and shoes shined to such a luster that Dr. Ecstein wondered whether he hadn't cheated by using black Day-glo.

'Yes, sir,' Dr. Rhinehart said before anyone else had said a word.

'One moment, Dr. Rhinehart,' Dr. Weinburger said sharply. 'I looked down at the papers in front of him. Does Dr. Rhinehart know the charges being brought against him?' 'Yes,' said Doctors Mann and Ecstein at the same time. 'What's all this about dice, young man?' Dr. Cobblestone said. His cane lay on the table in front of him as if it were a piece of evidence relevant to the proceedings.

'New therapy I'm developing, sir,' Dr. Rhinehart replied hotly. 'I understand that,' he said. 'What we mean is that you explain.'

'Yes, sir, in dice therapy we encourage our patients to make decisions by casting dice. The purpose is to destroy the

personality. We wish to create in its place a multiple personality: an individual inconsistent, unreliable and progressively schizoid.'

Dr. Rhinehart spoke in a clear, firm and reasonable voice, but for some reason his answer was greeted by a silence, broken only by Dr. Moon's harsh, uneven breathing. Dr. Cobblestone's stern lower jaw became sterner.

'Go on,' said Dr. Weinburger.

'My theory is that we all have minority impulses which are stifled by the normal personality and rarely break free into action. The desire to hit one's wife is forbidden by the concepts of dignity, femininity and covetousness of unbroken crockery. The desire to be religious is stopped by the knowledge that one "is" an atheist. Your desire, sir, to shout "stop this nonsense!" is stopped by your sense of yourself as a fair and rational man.

'The minority impulses are the Negroes of the personality. They have not enjoyed freedom since the personality was founded; they have become the invisible men. We refuse to recognize that a minority impulse is a potential full man, and that until he is granted the same opportunity for development as the major conventional selves, the personality in which he lives will be divided, subject to tensions which lead to periodic explosions and riots.'

'Negroes must be kept in their place,' said Dr. Moon, suddenly, his round, wrinkled face suddenly coming alive with the appearance of two fierce red eyes in its ravaged landscape. He was leaning forward intensely, his mouth, after he had finished his short sentence, dangling open.

'Go on,' said Dr. Weinburger.

Dr. Rhinehart nodded gravely to Dr. Moon and resumed.

'Every personality is the sum total of accumulated suppressions of minorities. Were a man to develop no consistent pattern of impulse control he would have no definable personality: he would be unpredictable and anarchic, one might even say, *free*.'

'He would be insane,' came Dr. Peerman's high-pitched voice from his end of the table. His thin, pale face was expressionless.

'Let us hear the man out,' said Dr. Cobblestone.

'Go on,' said Dr. Weinburger.

'In stable, unified, consistent societies the narrow personality had value; men could fulfill themselves with only one self.



single integrated personality, to suppress his natural multiplicity and build a single dominant self to control the others. This totalitarian solution means that a large standing army of energy must be maintained to crush the efforts of the minority selves to take power. The normal personality exists in a state of continual insurrection.'

'Some of this makes sense,' added Dr. Ecstein helpfully.

'In dice theory we attempt to overthrow the totalitarian personality and -'

'The masses need a strong leader,' interrupted Dr. Moon.

The silence which followed was broken only by his uneven breathing.

'Go on,' said Dr. Weinburger.

'All I've got to say for now,' replied Dr. Moon, closing the shutters on the red furnaces of his eyes and beginning to swing in a slow arc toward the shoulder of Dr. Mann.

'Go on, Dr. Rhinehart,' said Dr. Weinburger, his face expressionless but his hands crumpling up the papers in front of him like octopi demolishing squid.

Dr. Rhinehart glanced at his wristwatch and went on.

'Thank you. In our metaphor - which has that same admirable degree of scientific precision and rigor as Freud's famous parable of the superego, the ego, and the id - in our metaphor, the anarchic chance-led person is governed in fact by a benevolent despot: the Die. In the early stages of therapy only a few selves are able to offer themselves as options to the Die. But as the student progresses, more and more selves, desires, values and roles are raised into the possibility of existence; the human being grows, expands, becomes more flexible, more various. The ability of major selves to overthrow the Die declines, disappears. The personality is destroyed. The man is free. He -'

'I see no need to let Dr. Rhinehart go on,' said Dr. Weinburger, suddenly standing up. 'Although, as Dr. Ecstein has so helpfully observed, some of it makes sense, the idea that the destruction of the personality is the way to mental health may be rejected on *a priori* grounds. I need only remind you gentlemen of the first sentence of Dr. Mann's brilliant textbook on abnormal psychology: "If a person has a strong sense of his identity, of the permanency of things and of an integral selfhood, he will be secure."' He smiled over at Dr. Mann. 'I therefore move -'

'Precisely,' said Dr. Rhinehart. 'Or rather, precisely, sir. It



'Ah, but Dr. Rhinehart, you can't.' said Dr. Cobblestone.

'No, ah, I regret to say I'm serious. Every society is based upon lies. Our society of today is based on conflicting lies. The man who lived in a simple, stable, simple lie society absorbed the single-lie system into a unified self and spouted it for the rest of his life, uncontradicted by his friends and neighbors, and unaware that ninety eight percent of his beliefs were illusions, his values artificial and arbitrary and most of his desires comically ill-aimed.

'The man in our multi-lie society absorbs a chaos of conflicting lies and is reminded daily by his friends and neighbors that his beliefs are not universally held, that his values are personal and arbitrary and his desires often ill aimed. We must realize that to ask this man to be honest and true to himself, when his contradictory selves have multiple contradictory answers to most questions, is a safe and economical method of driving him insane.

'On the other hand, to free him from his maddening conflict we must urge him to let go, to act, to pretend, to lie. We must give him the means to develop these abilities. He must become a deep person.'

'Seel Seel' Dr. Peerman interrupted. 'He just confessed to advocating a therapy which encourages lying. Did you hear him?'

'I believe we have been listening to Dr. Rhinehart, thank you, Dr. Peerman,' said Dr. Weinburger, again mangling the papers in front of him. 'Dr. Rhinehart, you may go on.'

Dr. Rhinehart glanced at his watch and continued

'When all men lie by their very being in a multi-lie society, only the sick try to be honest, and only the very sick ask for honesty in others. Psychologists, of course, urge the patient to be authentic and honest. Such methods -'

'If our methods are so bad,' asked Dr. Weinburger harshly, 'then why do any of our patients improve at all?'

'Because we've encouraged them to play new roles,' Dr. Rhinehart answered promptly. 'Primarily the role of "feeling honest", but also the roles of feeling guilty, having control, being oppressed, discovering insights, being sexually liberated and so on. Of course, the patient and therapist are under the illusion that they are getting at *true* desires when in fact they are only releasing and developing new and different desires.'

'Good point. Luke,' said Dr. Ecstein.

'The limitations placed on this new role playing are even



The more someone tries to be honest and authentic, the more he's going to be blocked and inhibited. The question "How do you *really* feel about me?" ought always to be answered with a belt in the teeth. But if someone were asked: "Tell me fantastically and imaginatively how you feel about me," he'd be free from that neurotic demand for unity and truth. He could express any of his conflicting selves - one at a time of course. He'd be able to play each role to the hilt. He'd be at one with his schizophrenia.'

Dr. Rhinehart stood up.

'Mind if I pace about a bit?' he asked.

'Go ahead,' said Dr. Weinburger. Dr. Rhinehart began striding back and forth in front of the long table, for a while his pace just matching the shorter roll of Dr. Moon between the shoulders of his two colleagues.

'Now, about how all this works in practice,' he began again. 'It's tough starting dice therapy with a patient. His resistance to chance is as great today as was his resistance to Freud's sexual mythology seventy years ago. When we ask a typical miserable American to let the dice make a decision he goes along only if he thinks it's a temporary game. When he sees I seriously expect him to make important decisions by chance, he inevitably pees in his pants.

'Figuratively speaking. In most cases this initial resistance - pants peeing, we call it - is overcome and the therapy begins.

'We have to begin in the most trivial ways. The psychotic has no areas free to be spontaneous and original. The neurotic has few normal, "healthy" persons like yourselves have only a small handful. All other areas are controlled by the dictatorship of personality. It's the job of dice therapy, like the job of revolution in the world as a whole, to enlarge free territory.

'We work first in areas where there's not much threat to the normal personality. Once a patient's got the ground rules and got into the spirit of playfulness, we expand the dice decisions into other areas.'

'Exactly what do your patients do with the dice?' Dr. Cobblestone asked.

'Well, first we let the dice make decisions for the patient where he's in conflict. "Two roads diverged within a wood, and I, I took the one directed by the Die, and that has made all the difference." So Little Red Riding Hood wrote, and so we must all do. The patients groove to this use of the dice right away.





lems can be solved, but are not *his* to worry about any longer: they've been shifted to the square shoulders of the dice. He becomes ecstatic. He experiences the transfer of control from an illusory self to the dice as a conversion or as salvation. It's something like newly born Christians giving up their souls to Christ or God, or the Zen student or Taoist surrendering to the Tao. In all these cases the ego-control game is abandoned and the student surrenders to a force which is experienced as being outside himself.

'Let me quote to you what one of our dicestudents has written about his experience.' Dr. Rhinehart returned to his chair, extracted some papers from his briefcase and began to read from one.

It was great. It was a real religious feeling, a spiritual thing. Suddenly I was free of all my hangups about raping little girls and bugging boys. I gave up the struggle and put the whole mess into the hands of the dice. When they ordered rapé, I raped. When they ordered abstinence, I abstained. No problem. When they say fly to Peru, I fly to Peru. It's like being in the middle of a movie I've never seen before. It's tremendously interesting and I'm the star. In the last couple of months I haven't even bothered to give the dice any little-girl or little-boy options. I don't know, everything else is so fascinating I just don't seem to have the old get-up-and-go anymore.

Dr. Rhinehart placed the paper back on his chair and resumed his pacing.

'Of course, it takes a while for our students to reach this level of freedom. At first they often cast the dice and think: "Now I must have the willpower to do it." That's bad. The illusion that an ego controls or has "willpower" must be abandoned. The student's got to see his relation to the dice first as that of a baby in a rubber raft on a flooded river: each motion of the river is pleasant; he doesn't need to know where he's going or when, if ever, he'll arrive. Motion is all. And then he's got to reach the point where he and the Die are each playing with one another. It's not that the person has gained equality with the Die, it's that the human vessel is now so infused with the Spirit of the Die that he's become in effect a Sacred Vehicle, a Second Cube. The student has become Die.'

Dr. Rhinehart stopped pacing for the moment and looked



hadn't experienced since his earliest childhood. His sudden death last week at the age of twenty-nine is a tragic loss.'

As he looked from one doctor to another, Dr. Rhinehart's eyes glittered behind his glasses. He continued.

'Then there's Exercise K - named in honor of the eminent German-American researcher, Dr. Abraham Krum.' Dr. Rhinehart smiled at Dr. Mann. 'The student lists six optional roles or selves he might adopt for periods varying from a few minutes to a week or more. Exercise K is the key to a successful dicelife. The student who practices this daily for an hour or two, or each week for a whole day, is on his way to becoming a full-blooded diceperson.'

'Families and friends assume, of course, that the student is on the road to insanity and that his therapist is already there, but ignoring doubt and ridicule is a necessary part of becoming a diceperson. Dr. Fumm tells me that a student of his expanded Exercise K hour by hour until he had gone from an hour a day to twenty-three hours a day, varying who he was every day of the week - except Sunday, which he reserved for rest. At first his friends and family were hysterical with fear and rage, but once he'd explained to them what he was doing they began to adjust. At the end of a few months his wife and children would simply ask him at breakfast each morning who he was and make the necessary accommodations. Since among his many roles he was Saint Simeon Stylites, Greta Garbo, a three-year-old child and Jack the Ripper, the members of his family deserve a lot of credit for their psychological maturity. May they rest in peace.' Dr. Rhinehart stopped pacing and looked, solemn and sincere, directly at Dr. Mann.

Dr. Mann stared back blankly; then his face flushed. Scowling at the floor briefly, Dr. Rhinehart resumed his pacing.

'As you can see,' he said, 'like all potent medications dice therapy has certain not-so-hot side effects.'

'For example, the student usually gets the idea that the dice ought to determine whether he stays in therapy or not. Since he gives the option a lot of chances, the dice sooner or later order him to leave therapy. Sometimes they tell him to return. And then leave again. Sometimes they tell him to pay his therapy bill, sometimes not. It must be admitted that dice-students are, as patients, a little unreliable. You'll be happy to know, however, that the more unreliable a student becomes, the closer he probably is to total cure.'

'A second side effect is that a student does zany things like







'The man is no longer human.'

'I beg your pardon?' said Dr. Weinburger.

'The man is no longer human.'

'Oh. Yes.' Dr. Weinburger stood up. 'Then if there are no further questions, I must ask Dr. Rhinehart to leave the room so that we may proceed to a vote on the issue before us.'

'I'm inhuman you say?' said Dr. Rhinehart quietly, remaining in his chair next to Dr. Ecstein. 'Big deal, I'm inhuman. But with the human pattern such as it is these days can the word *inhuman* constitute an insult? Considered in the light of normal, everyday, garden-variety human cruelty in the marketplace, the ghetto, the family, in war, your *inhuman* refers to the abnormality of my actions, not their level of moral depravity.'

'Dr. Rhinehart,' Dr. Weinburger interrupted, still standing, 'would you please -'

'Come on, I've only been talking nonsense an hour, give me a chance.'

He stared wordlessly at Dr. Weinburger until the chairman slowly lowered himself into his chair.

'The suffering our dice-dictated actions causes is clearly nothing as compared man for man to that caused by rational, civilized man. Dicepeople are amateurs at evil. What seems to disturb you guys is that others are sometimes manipulated not by an ego-motivated me but by a dice-motivated me. It's the seeming gratuity of the occasional suffering we cause that shocks. You prefer purposeful, consistent, solidly structured suffering. The idea that we create love because the dice order us to, that we express love, that we feel love, all because of accident, shatters the fabric of your illusions about the nature of man.'

When Dr. Weinburger began to rise in his chair again Dr. Rhinehart simply raised his huge right arm and continued calmly:

'But what is this nature of man you're so gung-ho to defend? Look at yourselves. Whatever happened to the real inventor in you? to the lover? or the adventurer? or the saint? or the woman? You killed them. Look at yourselves and ask: "Is this the Image of God in which man was created?"' Dr. Rhinehart looked from Peerman to Cobblestone to Weinburger to Mean to Mann. 'Blasphemy. God creates, experiments, rides the wind. He doesn't wallow in the accumulated feces of his





## Chapter Forty-nine

*[Being a Special Die-Dictated Dramatization of the Judicial Deliberations of the Executive Committee of PANY as Recreated from the Tape Recording and Testimony of Dr. Jacob Ecstein.]*

For several moments the five members of the committee sat in silence, broken only by the harsh, uneven breathing of the sleeping Dr. Moon. Doctors Weinburger, Cobblestone and Mann, were all staring at the door which had closed behind Dr. Rhinehart. Dr. Peerman broke the silence:

'I believe we should conclude our business.'

'Ah. Ah. Ah, yes,' said Dr. Weinburger. 'The vote. We must have the vote.' But he remained staring at the door. 'Thank God, he's insane,' he added.

'The vote,' repeated Dr. Peerman in his shrill voice.

'Yes, of course. We are now voting on Dr. Peerman's motion that our committee expel Dr. Rhinehart for the reasons listed and request that the AMA consider taking action against him as well. Dr. Peerman?'

'I cast my vote in favor of my motion,' he said solemnly to the chairman.

'Dr. Cobblestone?'

The old doctor was fingering nervously the cane held erect between his legs and staring blankly at the empty chair of Dr. Rhinehart.

'I vote aye,' he said neutrally.

'Two votes to condemn,' announced Dr. Weinburger. 'Dr. Mann?'

Dr. Mann shrugged his right shoulder violently and jarred Dr. Moon into a more or less vertical position, Moon's eyes flaring open briefly and erratically.

'I still think we ought to have asked Dr. Rhinehart quietly to resign,' said Dr. Mann. 'I make a *pro forma* vote of no.'

'I understand, Tim,' said Dr. Weinburger sympathetically. 'And you, Dr. Moon?'

Dr. Moon's body was balanced erect, and his eyelids slowly rose, revealing the red coals of his dying eyes. His face looked as if it had suffered all the miseries of every human that had ever lived.



'In that case the vote is two to two.'

'Vote's two to one for acquittal,' said Dr. Moon and, after a desperate, hollow, rattling intake of air, he finished:

'Chairman of committee can't vote except to break ties.'

'Dr. Moon, sir,' said Dr. Weinburger weakly, bracing himself against the table to keep himself from fainting: 'Could you please consider changing your vote or at least explaining it?'

The red coals of Dr. Moon's dying eyes blazed forth one last time from the face which looked as if it had suffered all the miseries of every human that had ever lived.

'M'vote's obvious,' he said.

Dr. Weinburger began recrumpling the papers which he had finished neatening in front of him.

'Dr. Moon, sir,' he said again weakly. 'Would you consider changing your vote in order to ... simplify ... to simplify ... Dr. Moon! Dr. Moon!'

But the silence in the room was total.

Was total.



'Luke, you're a quack.' Fred Boyd said to me, smiling and looking out our kitchen windows toward the old barn and poison ivy fields.

'Mmmm,' I said, as Lil moved past our table back outdoors to get the groceries.

'A Phi Beta Kappa quack, a brilliant quack. but a quack,' he said.

'Thanks, Fred. You're kind.'

'The trouble is,' he said, dunking a somewhat stale doughnut into his lukewarm coffee, 'that some of it makes sense. That confuses the issue. Why can't you just be a complete fool or charlatan?'

'Huh. Never thought of that. I'll have to let the Die consider it.'

Lil and Miss Welish came in from the yard with the two children clamoring after them, clawing at the bags of groceries Lil carried in her arms. When Lil took out a box of cookies and distributed three each to the two children, they wandered back outdoors, arguing halfheartedly about who had the largest.

Miss Welish, dressed in white tennis shirts and blouse, bounced girlishly and a bit chubbily across the floor to hustle up some fresh coffee and deliver the fresh pastry we'd been promised. Fred watched her, sighed, yawned and tipped way back in his chair, his hands clasped behind his head.

'And where's it all going to end, I wonder?' he said.

'What?' I asked.

'Your dice therapy business.'

'The Die only knows.'

'Seriously. What do you think you'll achieve?'

'Try it yourself,' I said.

'I have. You know I have. And it's fun ; I admit it. But my God, if I took it seriously I'd have to change completely.'

'Precisely.'

'But I like the way I am.'

'So do I, but I'm getting bored with you,' I said. 'It's variety and unpredictability we like in our friends. Those capable of the unexpected we cherish ; they capture us because we're in-



didn't seem to have deflected his aim. Since the Krum party, Fred had slowly but surely, with all that scholarly discipline and thoroughness for which Harvard men are renowned, worked his way into Miss Welish's not inconsiderable pants; he seemed undisturbed about whether other scholars had worked on the subject previously or not.

'The only problem I can see with all this,' Fred said, 'is that you've got a poor sense of limits, Luke. To a degree, dice living has value, extraordinary value. I've experienced it. I've talked to Orv Boggles and that Tracy girl and a couple of other students of yours and I know. But good God, Luke, the trouble you've caused by not taking it easy, not using common sense.'

'Understatement of the century,' said Lil.

'I may overdo it occasionally, but in a good cause. A good cause. "The road of excess leads to the palace of wisdom" - so said Calvin Coolidge, and I believe him.'

'But no more Krum parties, okay?' Fred asked with a smile.

'I promise never to play six roles at a party ever again.'

'But he's got to keep experimenting,' Miss Welish said.

'I promise to be only a moderate quack,' I said. 'All day.'

'Well, is it tennis, a swim at the ocean, the club, or a sail?' Fred said and got up from the table.

'We need two more options,' Lil added.

'I throw,' said Miss Welish, and she got up to go to the cupboard and get out our family dice. Eventually we all gathered around the kitchen table as Miss Welish flipped the die onto the soiled tablecloth: tennis. We cast again to see whose car we would take and once more to see who played whom and we were off.

It was the first weekend of August, and we were vacationing in our old farmhouse out in the poison ivy fields of eastern Long Island, and things were going quite well. Lil, after questioning me all month about dice theory and therapy, had become more and more interested and less antagonistic. I had brought Professor Boggles home for dinner one night and he had given a fine testimonial to the gifts of the Die.

Our separation and divorce was in temporary abeyance. Lil was putting up with me on the condition that I behave myself with rational irrationality.

Fred Boyd had been a frequent visitor since my return from the clinic in mid-July, and we'd enjoyed half a dozen discussions of dice theory and practice. He ~~tended~~





bulb going off in her head, her eyes lit up, and she looked tender and compassionate.

'- boobs like bee-bees, ass so flat and bony you can use it to iron with -'

'Luke, Luke, Luke,' she repeated gently.

'LooLooLoo yourself, bitch. You have no more courage than a squashed ant. A mouse. I married a mouse.'

Anger flared again across her face.

'Look at her - can't even follow a dice command for thirty seconds without losing control...'

Bewilderment. I paced in intense anger in front of her.

'To think, I might have been fucking a woman all these years: a big-boobed bundle of orgasms like Arlene -'

'Luke -' she said.

'- or a honey-cunted tiger like Terry -'

'My poor, poor Luke -'

'I get a beady-eyed red-rimmed, tail-dragging mouse.'

She was smiling and shaking her head and her eyes, though red-rimmed, were clear and bright.

'- me puke to think of it.' I was towering over her, fists clenched, sneering and hissing and gasping for breath. It felt so good, but she was looking up at me soft-eyed and defenceless and unhurt. It made me rail harder and harder until I was shamelessly repeating myself.

'Luke, I love you -' she said when I paused.

'Pity, stupid. You're supposed to feel pity. Can't even play a game right -'

'My Luke -'

'Brainless, chestless, assless clump of -'

'My poor sweet sick hero.'

'I'm not sweet! You bitch. I'll stick a dustmop up your -'

'Time,' she said. 'It's time.'

'I don't give a fuck. I'd like to chop off your mousy head and peddle your cunt to lepers. I'd like -'

'The three minutes is up, Luke,' she said quietly

'Oh,' I said, towering over her and slobbering.

'Oh. Sorry about that,' I added.

'It's enough for now,' she said 'And thanks.'

She then proceeded to bury her face in my belly as I went on to a fine fierce diceless fuck, such as is usually associated with the highly charged emotions of the beginning or ending of an affair. She'd been compassionate - loving even since. Mostly.



## Chapter Fifty-two

'I want you to help me to escape,' Eric said quietly, holding the tuna-fish-salad sandwich in his hands lightly, as if it were delicate. We were in the Ward W cafeteria crowded in amongst other patients and their visitors. I was dressed casually in an old black suit and a black turtleneck shirt, he was in stiff gray mental-hospital fatigues.

'Why?' I asked, leaning toward him so I could hear better over the surrounding din of voices.

'I've got to get out; I'm not doing anything here anymore.' He was looking past my shoulder at the chaos of men in line behind my back.

'But why me? You know you can't trust me,' I said.

'I can't trust you, *they* can't trust you, no one can trust you.'

'Thanks.'

'But you're the only untrustworthy one on *their* side who knows enough to help us.'

'I'm honored.' I smiled, leaning back in my chair and self-consciously taking a sip from the straw leading into my paper carton of chocolate milk. I missed the beginning of his next sentence.

'... will leave. I know that. Somehow it will come to pass.'

'What?' I said leaning forward again.

'I want you to help me to escape.'

'Oh, that,' I said. 'When?'

'Tonight.'

'Ahhhh,' I said, like a doctor being given an especially interesting set of symptoms.

'Tonight at 8 P.M.'

'Not eight fifteen?'

'You will charter a bus to take a group of patients to see *Hair* in Manhattan. The bus will arrive at 7:45 p.m. You will come in and lead us out.'

'Why do you want to see *Hair*?'

His dark eyes darted at me briefly, then back to chaos beyond my shoulder.

'We're not going to see *Hair*. We're escaping,' he went on quietly. 'You'll let us all off on the other side of the bridge'.

'But no one can leave the hospital like that without'



'Sorry,' I said, feeling angry. 'This is the best I can do.' I thought for several seconds and then went on: 'I'm going to cast one die. If it's a two or a six I'll try to help you and thirty-seven others escape somehow from this hospital sometime tonight.' He didn't reply. 'All right?'

'Go ahead and shake a six,' he said quietly.

I stared back at him for a moment and then cupped my hands, shook the die hard against my palms and flipped it onto the table between my empty milk carton and two lumps of tuna salad and the salt. It was a two.'

'Ha!' I said instinctively.

'Bring us some money too,' he said, leaning back slightly but without expression. 'About a hundred bucks should do.'

He pushed back his chair and stood up and looked down at me with a bright smile.

'God works in mysterious ways,' he said.

I looked back at him and for the first time realized that I too wanted not *my* will but the Die's will to be done.

'Yes,' I said. 'The vehicles of God come in many shapes and sizes.'

'See you tonight,' he said and edged his way out of the cafeteria.

Actually I wouldn't mind seeing *Hair* again, I thought, and then, smiling in dazed awe at the day I had before me, I set to work planning the Great Mental Hospital Escape.



'But it will tend to break down the sense of a stable self so necessary for a human to feel secure.'

'Only superficially. Actually, it builds a dicestudent's - Jesus, I'm using your terms already - a patient's strength by forcing him into continual conflict with others.'

'Builds ego strength?'

'Sure. You're not afraid of anything now, are you?'

'Well, I don't know.'

'You've made an ass of yourself so many times that you can't be hurt.'

'Ahh, very acute.'

'That's ego strength.'

'Without any ego.'

'Semantics, but it's what we're after. I can't be hurt because I analyze everything. A scientist examines his wound, his wounder and his healer with equal neutrality.'

'And the dicestudent obeys the dice decision, good and bad, with equal passion.'

'Right,' he said.

'But what kind of a society will it be if people begin consulting the Die to make their decisions?'

'No problem. People are only as eccentric as their options and most of the people who will go through dice therapy are going to develop just like you; that's what makes your case so important. They're all going to go through a period of chaotic rebellion and then move into a lifetime of moderate, rational use of the dice consistent with some overall purpose.'

'That's very nice, Jake,' I said and leaned back on the couch from the alert sitting position I had been in.

'I'm depressed,' I added.

'Moderate, rational use of the dice is rational and moderate and every man should try it.'

'But the dicelife should be unpredictable and irrational and immoderate. If it isn't, it isn't dicelife.'

'Nonsense. You're following the dice these days, right?'

'Yes.'

'You're seeing your patients, living with your wife, seeing me regularly, paying your bills, talking to your friends, obeying the laws: you're leading a healthy, normal life. You're cured.'

'A healthy, normal life -'

'And you're not bored anymore.'

'A healthy, normal life unbored -'



'Right. You're cured.'

'It's hard to believe.'

'You were a tough nut to crack.'

'I don't feel any different than I did three months ago.'

'Dice therapy, purpose, regularity, moderation, sense of limits: you're cured.'

'So this is the end of my booster analysis?'

'It's all over but the shouting.'

'How much do I owe you?'

'Miss R'll have the bill for you when you leave.'

'Well, thank you, Jake.'

'Luke, baby, I'm finishing up "The Case of the Six-Sided Man" this afternoon and after poker tonight. I thank you.'

'It's a good article?'

'Tougher the case, better the article. By the way I've asked old Arnie Weissman to try to get you invited to speak at this fall's annual AAPP convention - on Dice Therapy. Pretty good, huh?'

'That's thoughtful, Jake.'

'Thought I'd present "The Case of the Six-Sided Man" on the same day.'

'The dynamic duo,' I said.

'I thought of titling the article "The Case of the Mad Scientist," but settled on "The Six-Sided Man." What do you think?'

'The "Case of the Six-Sided Man." It's beautiful.'

Jake came around from behind his neat desk and put his arm way up on my shoulder and grinned up into my face.

'You're a genius, Luke, and so am I, but moderation.'

'So long,' I said, shaking his hand.

'See you tonight for poker,' he said as I was leaving.

'Oh that's right. I'd forgotten. I may be a bit late. But I'll see you.'

As I was softly closing the door behind me, he caught my eye one last time and grinned.

'You're cured,' he said.

'I doubt it, Jake, but you never can tell. Die be with you.'

'You too, baby.'

## Chapter Fifty-four

[From The New York Times, Wednesday, August 13, 1969, late edition.]

*In the largest mass escape in the history of New York State Mental Institutions, thirty-three patients of Queensborough State Hospital of Queens escaped last night during a performance of Hair at the Blovill Theater in midtown Manhattan.*

*By 2 a.m. this morning ten of these had been recaptured by city police and hospital officials, but twenty-three remained at large.*

*At the Blovill Theater the patients sat through the first act of the hit musical Hair, but as the second act was beginning they made their escape. Most of the patients began to snake-dance their way onto the stage to the music of the first number of Act II 'Where Do I Go?', mingled with the cast, and then fled backstage and hence to the street. The Blovill audience apparently assumed the performance of the patients was part of the show.*

*Hospital officials claim that someone apparently forged the signature of Hospital Director Timothy J. Mann, M.D., on documents ordering staff members to make arrangements to transport thirty-eight patients from the admissions ward to see the musical by chartered bus.*

*Dr. Lucius M. Rhinehart, whom the forged documents had ordered to organize and guide the expedition, stated that he and his attendants had concentrated on holding the three or four potentially dangerous patients and could not make an effort to pursue the majority when they fled backstage. In all, five patients were restrained within the theatre.*

*'The excursion was ill-timed and ill-planned - ridiculous in fact and I knew it,' he said. 'But I failed on four separate occasions to get in touch with Dr. Mann to question him about the request, and, failing, had no choice but to carry it out.'*

*Police indicated that the size of the mass escape, the character of some of the patients involved, and the complicated series of forgeries needed to fool responsible staff members indicate a plot of major proportions.*



aren't dressed for it or want to watch the Mets' night game on TV? Since I didn't know which thirty-eight of the forty-three patients on the ward my sponsor wanted to lead to freedom, I had to choose at random thirty-eight names – which naturally did not correspond with those Mr. Cannon had in mind. Do you think that the head nurse or Dr. Lucius M. Rhinehart would permit any substitution for the names on this list?

'Look here, Rhinehart, two of my best men are not on this list,' Arturo whispered desperately into my ear at seven fifty-three that night.

'They'll have to see *Hair* another night,' I said.

'But I want these men,' he went on fiercely.

'These are the thirty-eight names on the list. These are the thirty-eight patients whom I will escort to *Hair*.'

He dragged me farther off into the corner.

'But Cannon said only that the dice said –'

'The dice said only that I would try to help Mr. Cannon and thirty-seven other mental patients escape. It mentioned no names. If you want to take some initiative, I assure you I don't know Smith from Peterson from Klug, but I myself am taking only people who call themselves Smith, Peterson and Klug.'

He rushed away.

Five minutes later Head Nurse Herbie Flamm waddled up:

'Say, Dr. Rhinehart, I don't see Heckelburg on this list but I just saw him leave with that last group with your attendants.'

'Heckelburg?' I said. 'Perhaps not. I'll check.' I walked away.

Flamm caught me again just as I was leaving.

'Sorry to bother you again, Doc, but four of the guys on your list are still here and four guys who aren't on your list have just left.'

'Are you positive, Mr. Flamm, that you now have five patients left on the ward?'

'Yes sir.'

'And that only thirty-eight have left?'

'Yes sir.'

'Are you sure my name is Rhinehart?'

He stared up at me and began caressing his big belly nervously.

'Yes, sir. I think so, sir.'

'You *think* my name is Rhinehart?'



'Listen to the music. I have brought you to *Hair*. Enjoy yourself. Dance. Be happy.'

Through it all Eric Cannon retained the serenity of a golfer with a two-inch putt and never once approached me - except for two seconds just after the end of the first act (*'Groovy show, Dr. Rhinehart, glad we came'*). But Arturo X squirmed in his seat every second that he wasn't lunging up the aisle to speak to one of his followers or to me.

'Look, Rhinehart,' he hissed at me near the end of the intermission. 'What will you do if we all get up and dance and go onto the stage?'

'I have brought you to *Hair*. I want you to enjoy yourselves. Be happy. Dance. Sing.'

He stared into my eyes like an oculist searching for signs of retinal decomposition and then barked out a short laugh.

'Jesus . . .' he said.

'Have a good time, son,' I said as he left.

'Dr. Rhinehart, I think the patients are whispering among themselves,' one of my big attendants said about three minutes later.

'A dirty joke no doubt,' I said.

'That Arturo Jones has been going around to everyone whispering.'

'I told him to remind everyone to catch the bus back to the island with us.'

'What if someone tries to make a break for it?'

'Apprehend him gently but firmly.'

'What if they all make a break for it?'

'Apprehend those with the most acute socially debilitating illnesses - the zombies and killers in brief - and leave the rest to the police.' I smiled at him serenely. 'But no violence. We must not give our hospital attendants a bad name. We must not upset the audience.'

'Okay, Doctor.'

I seated myself between the most clearly homicidal patients, and when the men in our row began to rise to join the dance to the stage, I wrapped one of my huge arms around the throat of each of them and squeezed until they seemed strangely sleepy. I then watched the interesting opening to Act II where thirty or so oddly dressed members of the cast who had apparently been posing as members of the audience around me began to dance down the aisles and up on to the stage frolicking with each other in a friendly roughhouse way. The on-stage part of



'Relax, Tim, relax, I've got to talk some more to the police and the reporters and -'

'Don't say a word! I'm coming down. Say you've got laryngitis. Don't talk.'

'I've got to go now, Tim. You hurry on down.'

'Don't say -'

I hung up.

I talked to police and the reporters and minor hospital officials and then Dr. Mann in person for another hour and a half, not getting back to the poker party at my apartment until close to midnight.

Lil, I'm happy to report, was winning substantially, with Miss Welish and Fred Boyd the primary losers and Jake and Arlene breaking even. They were all rather interested in what had happened to so upset Dr. Mann, but I played it down, called it a minor Happening, a tempest in a teapot, implied that some subversive underground group had conspired a series of forgeries, and insisted I was sick of the subject and wanted to play poker.

I was tremendously keyed up and could barely sit still in my chair, but they kindly dealt me in, and by ignoring their further questions I was finally left to concentrate on my abominably bad luck with the cards. I lost badly to Fred Boyd on the first hand and even worse to Arlene on the second. By the end of seven hands without a winner I was thoroughly depressed and everyone else (except Miss Welish, who was sleepy and bored) was quite gay. The phone had rung just once and I had told the police that I didn't *know* how I had been cut off during my attempted phone call to Dr. Mann that afternoon, but that it obviously wasn't me since I was talking on the phone at the time. I told them that I talked to Arturo Jones at *Hair* because he was an acute drama critic and that I had singlehandedly held on to two of the most dangerous patients and that I'd appreciate a little *respect* since I felt badly enough about losing as it was.

I lost two more hands of poker and got gloomier and the party broke up with Fred telling about how he was using dice therapy with two of his patients and Jake telling me about a sentence he'd written in his article, and they were gone and Lil, laughing happily, went off to bed. I, despite several of her most obscene kisses, remained behind slumped in the easy chair brooding about my fate.





ing for a walk and left the apartment. Since this episode is of little importance, we report it in Dr. Rhinehart's own words:

I clumped down the stairs, past the rusty railing and cast-off advertising circular and rang the doorbell. It was 2.20 A.M., a little late this year, and certainly no time for a little *tête-à-tête*. Arlene came bleary-eyed clutching Jake's old bathrobe - to her throat.

'Oh,' she said.

'I've come to engage in sexual congress, Arlene.'

'Come in,' she said.

'The dice told me to do it again.'

'But Jake's here,' she said, blinking her eyes absently and letting the robe fall slightly open.

'He's working in his study at the end of the hall.'

'I'm sorry, but you know how the Die is,' I said.

'I promised not to hide anything from him anymore.'

'But did you consult the Die about that?'

'Oh, you're right.'

She turned and went down the hall a short way and then into her bedroom. I joined her at her vanity table, where successive flips of a Die determined that she was to tell Jake everything and that she was to permit sexual congress with me, but only in Kama Sutra positions eighteen and twenty-six, which, she said, were particularly suited for women in their fifth month of pregnancy.

I then followed her up the hall and watched over her shoulder as she stood in the slightly open doorway of Jake's study looking in at her husband hard at work at his desk.

'Jake?' she said tentatively.

'What's up?' he barked back, not looking up.

'Luke's here,' she said.

'Oh. Come on in Luke baby, I'm just about finished.'

'We're sorry to bother you, Jakie,' Arlene said, 'but the Die said Luke had to -'

'I've got a ring-dinger last chapter, Luke, if I do say so myself,' Jake said, smiling, and scratching furiously with his pen across some errant phrase.

'- engage in sexual congress,' I heard Arlene finish.

'What's that?' Jake said and looked up again.



But Dr. Rhinehart had stopped a few feet inside the door, and, slump-shouldered and bedraggled, he said: 'But I have miles to go before I sleep.'

Mrs. Rhinehart, still holding one of his large hands in hers, turned dreamily and smiled and yawned.

'I'll be waiting, sweetheart,' she said, and with an unintended swinging of the more desirable parts of her anatomy, she moved to her bed and climbed in.

'Goodnight, Lil,' Dr. Rhinehart said.

'Mmmm,' she said. 'Check the kids 'fore you come.'

Dr. Rhinehart, still holding in his left hand the paper, pen and two dice, walked quickly to the children's bedroom and tiptoed in to look at Larry and Evie. They were sound asleep, Larry with his mouth open like a child drunk and Evie with her face so buried by the sheet that he could only make out the top of her head.

'Have good dreams,' he said and silently left the room and returned to the living room.

He placed the paper, pencil and dice on the floor in front of the easy chair and then, with a sudden lunge, took four strides toward his bedroom and stopped. Sighing, he returned to kneel on the rug beside the tools of his trade. To relax himself and prepare for what he had to do, he performed a series of random dice exercises; four random physical exercises, two one-minute spurts of the sinner-saint game, and one three-minute period of emotional roulette - the Die choosing self-pity, an emotion he found himself expressing with enthusiasm. Then he placed the two green dice on the easy chair in front of him and, kneeling on the rug, intoned a prayer:

Great Godblob Die, I worship thee;  
Awaken me this morn  
With thy green gaze,  
Quicken my dead life  
With thy plastic breath.  
Spill into the arid spaces of my soul  
Thy green vinegar.

A hundred hungry birds scatter my seed,  
You roll them into cubes and plant me.

The people I fear are  
Puppets poking puppets,  
Playthings costumed by my mind.



He placed the paper by his side and the two green dice in front of him on the floor.

'Tuck me in, Dad,' a voice said from the other end of the room. It was his son Larry, practically asleep on his feet.

Dr. Rhinehart arose irritably, marched to the sleeping boy, lifted him up into his arms and carried him back to his bed. Larry was asleep as soon as his father had placed his head up to his neck again, and Dr. Rhinehart rushed back to his position on his knees in the living room.

The dice in position before him, he knelt silently for ten minutes and prayed. He then picked up the two dice and began shaking them gaily in the bowl of his hand:

Tremble in my hands, O Dice,  
As I so shake in yours.

And holding the dice above his head he intoned:

'Great bleak Blocks of God, descend, culminate, consummate  
Into your hands I commit my soul.'

The dice fell: a one and a two - three. He was saved for his wife and children forever.



## Chapter Fifty-seven

The heavens declare the glory of Chance ;  
And the firmament showeth his handywork.  
Day unto day uttereth accident,  
And night unto night showeth whim.  
There is no speech nor language  
Where their voice is not heard.  
Their line is gone out through all the earth,  
And their deeds to the end of the world.  
In them hath Chance set a tabernacle for the sun,  
Whose going forth is from the end of the heaven,  
And his circuit unto the ends of it :  
And there is nothing hid from the heat thereof.  
The law of Chance is perfect, converting the soul :  
The testimony of Chance is sure, making wise the simple.  
The statutes of Chance are right, rejoicing the heart :  
The commandment of Chance is pure, enlightening the eyes.  
The fear of Chance is clean, enduring forever :  
The judgments of Chance are true and righteous altogether.

~ from *The Book of the Die*



## Chapter Fifty-eight

Freedom, Reader, is an awful thing: so Jean-Paul Sartre, Erich Fromm, Albert Camus and dictators throughout the world continually tell us. I spent many days that August thinking about what I would do with my life, oscillating hour to hour from joy to gloom, madness to boredom.

I was lonely. There was no one to whom I could go and say: 'Aren't I wonderful; I left Lil and my job in order to toss dice and become a totally random man. If you're lucky the dice may let me finish this conversation.'

I had not given a last kiss to Lil and the children. I hadn't left a note. I had gathered up a few personal notebooks, a checkbook, two or three books (chosen by a Die at random), several pairs of green dice and left the apartment. I returned two minutes later and left the only message in the world I felt Lil might understand and believe: on the floor in front of the easy chair I had placed two dice, their upturned faces showing a two and a one.

I had thought at first that nothing should be *impossible* to the Dice Man at any given moment. It was an elevating aspiration. I might not be more powerful than a locomotive, faster than a speeding bullet, or able to leap tall buildings at a single bound, but in terms of being free at any given moment to do whatever the dice or the spontaneous 'I' might dictate, I would be, compared to all known past human beings, a superman.

But I was lonely. Superman at least had a regular job and Lois Lane. But being a real superbeing, one capable of marvels and miracles compared to the mechanical and repetitious acrobatics of Superman and Batman, was lonely. I'm sorry, fans, but that's how I felt.

I had gone to a dingy hotel in the East Village that made the geriatrics ward at QSH seem like a plush retirement villa. I sweated and sulked and wandered out to play a few dice roles and dice games and sometimes I enjoyed myself thoroughly, but those nights alone in that hotel room were not among the high points of my life.

The problem of boredom which the Die had so successfully solved seemed, now that I was approaching the totally free state, to be reappearing. My own family and friends had been boring enough, but I began to feel that the average humans I

was encountering on the streets and bars and hotels of Fun City were far worse. The dice had introduced me already to such variety that I was beginning to find, like Solomon, that it was difficult to find anything new under the sun.

As a wealthy southern aristocrat I had seduced a young, reasonably presentable typist and kept her two nights ('Y'all shore do have a nice boahdy') before the dice reincarnated me as a Bowery bum. I stored all my cash and some new clothes I had bought in a locker, stopped shaving and for two days and nights panhandled and got drunk on the Lower East Side. I didn't get much sleep and felt lonelier than ever, my only friends being an occasional stray derelict who would hang around until he was sure I was really broke. I got so hungry that I finally straightened up my clothes as best I could and stole a box of crackers and two cans of tuna fish from a small supermarket. A young clerk looked very suspicious but after I'd finished my 'browsing' I asked him if they sold amoratycemate and that shut him up while I left.

As a life-insurance salesman looking for a fresh lay, I failed to get anywhere and spent another lonely night.

The dice permitted me to phone the police three times; once to say in a thick Negro accent that the Black Panthers had sprung Arturo Jones from the hospital; once as Dr. Rhinehart to inform that I had left my wife but if they wanted to question me about anything I'd make myself available; and once as an anonymous hippie informer, telling them that Eric Cannon had been permitted to escape by an act of God.

I spent two days playing with a thousand dollars in a Wall Street brokerage house, letting the D's buy and sell on hold at its discretion and I only lost two hundred dollars but I was still bored.

About nine o'clock one hot August evening, sitting crowded and lonely at one end of a packed Village bar and having crumpled up in the course of the previous two days at least four separate lists of options, I had to face the fact that even that I was free to be absolutely anything. I was rapidly becoming interested in absolutely nothing, a somewhat disturbing development. It was such an original experience, however, that I began to laugh happily to myself. I was like a car, or an old engine warming up. I would be able to give the dice a brief vacation and see what happened. I would spend a few weeks organically instead of artificially.

Having thus decisively decided

...er, even with a tart, rather evil-tasting beer awash in my tummy and unfinished in my glass. I wanted rest. I'd left Linda a great triumph (I felt tired). Let me drift in peace.

Trying to feel serenity I left the noisy bar and, after a half-hour's organic wandering, entered another just like it. The beer tasted the same too. I thought of telephoning Jake and pretending to be Erich Fromm calling from Mexico City. I dismissed it as a symptom of loneliness. I thought of yelling, 'Drinks on me!' but my organic frugality vetoed the impulse. I daydreamed about buying a yacht and circling the globe.

'Well, if it isn't old coitus-interruptus himself.' The voice, sharp and feminine, was followed by the fact, soft and feminine, and the recognition, hard and masculine, of the half-smiling face of Linda Reichman.

'Er, hello, Linda,' I said, not too suavely. I found myself instinctively trying to remember what role I was supposed to be playing.

'What brings you here?' she asked.

'Oh, I... don't know. I sort of drifted here.' She edged between my neighbor and me and placed her drink on the bar. Her eyes were heavily made up, her hair a more deeply bleached blonde than I remembered it, her body no need to speculate about her measurements; her breasts layed bralessly against a tight-fitting multicolored T-shirt. She looked very sexy in a debauched sort of way and she eyed me with curiosity.

Drifted? The Great Psychiatrist drifted? I had the impression that you never even picked your nose without writing a little note proving its value.'

What was the old days. I've changed, Linda.'

Ever managed an orgasm?' She laughed and she smiled.

How about yourself? I asked. 'What've you been doing?' 'Integrating,' she said and gracefully swallowed the last drink. 'You ought to try it, it's fun.'

Thank I'd like to.'

He appeared next to her, a small frail man with glasses and a graduate student in organic chemistry, and he beckoned once at me, he said to Linda: 'Come on, let's

slowly turned her eyes to the man and, with a look of all previous looks I'd seen on her face seem like admiration, announced: 'I'm staying awhile.'

Organic chemistry blinked at her, looked at my impressive bulk nervously and took her by the elbow.

'Come on,' he said.

She lifted the dregs of her drink carefully off the bar past my face and poured it slowly down organic chemistry's back inside his shirt, ice cubes and all.

'Go change your shirt first,' she said.

He never batted an eye. With a barely perceptible shrug of the shoulders he merged back into the surrounding mob.

'You think you'd like to disintegrate, huh?' she said to me and then signaled to a bartender for another drink.

'Yes, but it seems like an awfully hard thing to do. I've been trying it for over a year now and it takes tremendous effort.'

'A year! You don't look it. You look like a middle-class insurance salesman who comes once every four months to the Village for a fresh lay.'

'You're wrong. I've been trying to disintegrate myself. But tell me, how do *you* go about it?'

'Me? Same as always. I haven't changed since you last saw me. Get my kicks the same ways. I spent three months in Venezuela – even lived with a man for almost a month, twenty-four days to be precise – but nothing's new.'

'Then you're failing,' I said.

'What d'you mean?'

'I mean if you're really trying to disintegrate you're not succeeding. You're not changing. You're staying the *same*.'

She wrinkled her clear, still youthful brow and took a big gulp from her fresh drink.

'It was just a word. Disintegration doesn't mean anything. I'm just living my life.'

'Would you like a new kick, one you've never had before and really disintegrate the old self?'

She laughed abruptly. 'I've had enough of your brand of kicks.'

'I've developed new brands.'

'Sex bores me. I've made love with every possible number and configuration of men, women and children, had penises and other appropriately shaped objects up every orifice in every possible combination and sex is a bore.'

'I'm not necessarily talking about sex.'

'Then maybe I'm interested.'

'It will mean a partnership with me for a while.'

'What kind of partnership?'



'After I've been your slave, big deal. What guarantee do I have?'

'None. Except that when you experience your new life with me and my madness, you'll realize that my form of slavery is desirable.'

'Why don't you be my slave first?'

'Because you wouldn't be an intelligent and imaginative master. I've been practicing this game on myself for years. I'll teach you first and then submit.'

'Maybe,' Linda said to me. 'But first I bat. For the next twenty-four hours you be my slave. You obey all I say except what might physically harm you or unnecessarily destroy your professional image. The same will be true when I obey you. How's that?'

'All right,' I said.

We looked at each other speculatively.

'How do we seal this agreement?' she asked.

'Total slavery is a new path and we both want to travel new paths - that's what disintegration is all about. I'm satisfied you have the desire and will live up to the agreement.'

'Okay. Have we begun?'

I glanced at my watch. 'We have begun. I obey you until tomorrow evening at nine forty-five. For the sake of anonymity my name is Charlie, Herbie (Flamm).'

'Your name is what I choose.'

'Yes, all right.'

'Follow me.'

Leaving the bar, we hailed a taxi and she took me to an apartment - hers I supposed - on the West Side in the twenties. There, after she had had me fix her a drink, she pulled her knees up under her on the couch and stared up at me with a look of cold analysis.

'Stand on your head.'

With an effort I awkwardly tried to balance myself on my head. Despite my recent efforts at yoga and yoga meditation I collapsed, tried and collapsed. About the fifth time down she said: 'All right, stand up.'

She lit a cigarette, her hand trembling - perhaps from all she had drunk.

'Take off your clothes,' she said.

I took them off.

'Masturbate,' she said quietly.

'It seems like a waste,' I said.

"When I want you to say something I'll say so."

The command was either cold or stern. Like most other well-to-do Jewish American youth I had masturbated my way through high school and part of college and after graduating to more frequent social and sexual intercourse with women had more or less abandoned the habit. I had been pleased to learn when I studied psychology that my mind was not deteriorating after all, but a residual layer of guilt somewhere remained. After all, can we picture Jesus beating his meat? Or Albert Schweitzer? Undoubtedly Linda believed in the intrinsic indignity of masturbation or the woman I have assigned it to me. For some reason I didn't find it easy to create images or fantasies of pleasure which would raise the old cannon into firing position. I stood there immobile, trying to think sexy thoughts.

"I said play with yourself."

Linda must have been under the impression that masturbation was primarily a case of self-career. In the immortal words of General MacArthur: "Nothing could be further from the truth." Nevertheless I began fondling myself. It was difficult to maintain a sense of dignity and I therefore stared hard at the floor at Linda's feet.

"Look at me while you're doing it," she said.

I looked at her. Her cold, tense, bitter face immediately stirred me. I imagined myself sexually revenging myself on her in the month ahead. My cannon bobbed upward, my mind concentrated hard for several minutes on my imaginary encounter, and with careful manual manipulation of the firing mechanism, I blasted off onto the floor. I tried hard to maintain a neutral, dignified expression throughout.

"Lick it up," she said.

A great weariness flowed through me; I'm sure my face sagged. But I slowly got down on my knees and began licking at the tiny pools of semen.

"Look at me," she said.

Somewhat awkwardly I tried to look at her and accomplish her command at the same time. I noted that the floor between the rugs was shiny and that someone had abandoned a male slipper under an easy chair. I didn't feel too supermanish.

"All right, get up."

I stood up, still looking at her neutrally, or so I hoped.

"You ought to be ashamed of yourself, Doctor," she said with a smile.

I became ashamed of myself and my head and shoulders sagged.

'Are these the sort of things you plan to do with me?' she asked.

'No.' I hesitated. 'I imagine men have treated you sadistically before.'

'So I'm not doing too well, huh?'

'Oh no, I think you are. I think you've chosen well, beyond what I'd expected. You've given me a new experience, one I won't forget.'

She stared at me, puffing sporadically on a cigarette; she'd finished her drink.

'What if I were to phone a friend of mine, a queer, and order you to perform sexually with him. Could you do it?'

'Your command is my wish,' I said.

'Does the thought interest or frighten you?'

I introspected obediently.

'It bores and depresses me.'

'Good.'

She had me fix her another drink and went to a telephone and dialed two numbers, asking at both for Jed and hanging up each time disappointed.

'Lie down on the floor, on your face, while I think.'

As I presented myself I began to look back with pleasure at being just old Luke. After a while she said: 'All right, let's go to bed.'

I followed her into a bedroom, neutrally removed her clothes piece by piece at her command and followed her into a narrow double bed. We both lay quietly not touching for a few minutes. I was conscientiously trying not to do a thing unless she commanded me. I felt her hand run down my chest across my belly and come to rest a few inches from my pubic hair. She turned to me and nibbled at my ear, licked my neck, kissed me slowly, wetly, languorously on the mouth and throat. And neck. And chest. And belly. And et cetera. Her maneuvers had a predictable effect despite my recent shameful behavior. She noted the effect, rolled over to the other side of the bed and said nothing else. She tossed and turned a long time and then I guess I must have fallen asleep.

Sometime later I was dreaming that I was going to take a bath and as I sank into the tub I paused to feel the delicious warmth on my balls and penis, and awoke to realize that I had warmed and stiffened my cock with her mouth. W



'When I want you to say something I'll say so.'

The command was easier said than done. Like most other red-blooded healthy American youth I had masturbated my way through high school and part of college and after graduating to more frequent social and sexual intercourse with women, had more or less abandoned the habit. I had been pleased to learn when I studied psychology that my mind was not deteriorating after all, but a residual layer of guilt somewhere remained. After all, can we picture Jesus beating his meat? Or Albert Schweitzer? Undoubtedly Linda believed in the intrinsic indignity of masturbation or she wouldn't have assigned it to me. For some reason I didn't find it easy to create images or fantasies of pleasure which would raise the old cannon into firing position. I stood there immobile, trying to think sexy thoughts.

'I said play with yourself.'

Linda must have been under the impression that masturbation was primarily a case of self-caresses. In the immortal words of General MacArthur: 'Nothing could be further from the truth.' Nevertheless, I began fondling myself. It was difficult to maintain a sense of dignity and I therefore stared hard at the floor at Linda's feet.

'Look at me while you're doing it,' she said.

I looked at her. Her cold, tense, bitter face immediately stirred me: I imagined myself sexually revenging myself on her in the month ahead. My cannon bobbed upward, my mind concentrated hard for several minutes on my imaginary encounter, and with careful manual manipulation of the firing mechanism, I blasted off onto the floor. I tried hard to maintain a neutral, dignified expression throughout.

'Lick it up,' she said.

A great weariness flowed through me; I'm sure my face sagged. But I slowly got down on my knees and began licking at the tiny pools of semen.

'Look at me,' she said.

Somewhat awkwardly I tried to look at her and accomplish her command at the same time. I noted that the floor between the rugs was shiny and that someone had abandoned a male slipper under an easy chair. I didn't feel too supermanish.

'All right, get up.'

I stood up, still looking at her neutrally, or so I hoped.

'You ought to be ashamed of yourself, Doctor,' she said with a smile.

I became ashamed of myself and my head and shoulders sagged.

'Are these the sort of things you plan to do with me?' she asked.

'No.' I hesitated. 'I imagine men have treated you sadistically before.'

'So I'm not doing too well, huh?'

'Oh no, I think you are. I think you've chosen well, beyond what I'd expected. You've given me a new experience, one I won't forget.'

She stared at me, puffing sporadically on a cigarette; she'd finished her drink.

'What if I were to phone a friend of mine, a queer, and order you to perform sexually with him. Could you do it?'

'Your command is my wish,' I said.

'Does the thought interest or frighten you?'

I introspected obediently.

'It bores and depresses me.'

'Good.'

She had me fix her another drink and went to a telephone and dialed two numbers, asking at both for Jed and hanging up each time disappointed.

'Lie down on the floor, on your face, while I think.'

As I presented myself I began to look back with pleasure at being just old Luke. After a while she said: 'All right, let's go to bed.'

I followed her into a bedroom, neutrally removed her clothes piece by piece at her command and followed her into a narrow double bed. We both lay quietly not touching for a few minutes. I was conscientiously trying not to do a thing unless she commanded me. I felt her hand run down my chest across my belly and come to rest a few inches from my pubic hair. She turned to me and nibbled at my ear, licked my neck, kissed me slowly, wetly, languorously on the mouth and throat. And neck. And chest. And belly. And et cetera. Her maneuvers had a predictable effect despite my recent shameful behavior. She noted the effect, rolled over to the other side of the bed and said nothing else. She tossed and turned a long time and then I guess I must have fallen asleep.

Sometime later I was dreaming that I was going to take a bath and as I sank into the tub I paused to feel the delicious warmth on my balls and penis, and awoke to realize that Linda had warmed and stiffened my cock with her mouth. When I



'Look at me,' I said.

She looked over at me.

'What we're doing is very important. The commands . . .'

'I don't want lectures.'

'I command you to listen to me.'

'You can order me to do a lot of other things, but no lectures. Not in these twenty-four hours.'

'I see,' I said. I paused. 'Return my kiss tenderly, with affection but without lust.'

She sat up beside me, looked coldly into my eyes for a moment and then, softening, brought her lips gently to mine.

I lay back onto the pillow and said: 'Kiss my face with the tenderness you'd feel . . . if my face were the white rose.'

A brief tautness crossed her face before, eyes closed, she framed my face with her hands and lowered her lips to begin gently kissing it.

'Thank you, Linda, that was beautiful. You are beautiful.'

She didn't open her eyes or interrupt her delicate kissing but after a while I said: 'Lie back now on the bed and close your eyes.'

She obeyed. Her face looked more relaxed than I had ever seen it.

'Pretend that I am a prince who loves you with a spiritual devotion beyond anything known outside of the most overdone fairy tale. You are worshipped by him. Your beauty exceeds that of any creature that God has ever created. And you are a perfect perfect person, without spiritual or physical flaw. And the prince, your husband, comes to you now on your wedding night to express at last the pure, religious, sacred, holy passion he has for you. Receive his love with joy.'

I had spoken slowly and hypnotically and began with what I hoped was appropriate delicacy and religiosity to caress her body and touch it with the most spiritual kisses. Spiritual kisses, for the average reader's information, are relatively dry, gentle and poorly aimed: that is, they approach central target zones but always manage to just miss. I was proceeding with increasing devotion and pleasure when her body suddenly disappeared: she had leapt out of bed.

'Stop touching me,' she yelled.

I felt as embarrassed and undignified as I had the night before.

'Are you taking away my power already?' I said.

'Yes, yes!' She was trembling.



[Being a questioning of Dr. Lucius Rhinehart by Inspector Nathaniel Putt of the New York City police regarding the unfortunate escape of thirty-three mental patients from a performance of *Hair*. Six of the patients are still at large.]

'Mr. Rhinehart, I -'

'It's Dr. Rhinehart,' interrupted Dr. Mann irritably.

'Ah, excuse me,' said Inspector Putt, ceasing his pacing briefly to stare back at Dr. Mann seated beside Dr. Rhinehart on a low, ancient couch in the inspector's office. 'Dr. Rhinehart, first, I must inform you that you are entitled to have a lawyer present to rep -'

'Lawyers make me nervous.'

'- resent you. I see. All right. Let's proceed. Did you or did you not meet with Eric Cannon in the cafeteria of QSH between the hours of ten thirty and eleven fifteen on August 12?'

'I did.'

'You *did*?'

'I did.'

'I see. For what purpose?'

'He invited me to see him. Since he was a distinguished former patient of mine, I went.'

'What did you talk about?'

'We talked about his desire to see the musical *Hair*. He informed me that many of the patients wanted to see *Hair*.'

'Anything else?'

'I shook the dice and determined that I would do everything in my power to take Eric and thirty-seven others to see *Hair*.'

'But, Luke,' interrupted Dr. Mann. 'You must have realized the incred -'

'Steady, Dr. Mann,' said Inspector Putt. 'I'll handle this.' He came and stood directly in front of Dr. Rhinehart, his tall, slender body leaning forward, his sharp gray eyes falling coldly on his suspect. 'After you decided to help Cannon and others to leave the hospital, what did you do?'

'I forged Dr. Mann's signature on letters to me and to several others and proceeded to effect the temporary release of the patients.'



'You have my statements and, when you get close enough to talk to him again, you will have Mr. Cannon's statements, which, however, will be inadmissible as evidence no matter what he says.'

'Thanks a lot,' the inspector said ironically.

'Does it not occur to you, Inspector, that in telling you that I forged Dr. Mann's signature, I may be lying because the Die has told me to?'

'What -'

'That in fact my original statements of innocence may be the true ones?'

'What? What are you suggesting?'

'Simply that yesterday when I heard that you wished to question me again, I created three options for the Die to choose from: that I tell you I had nothing to do with the order to go to *Hair*; that I tell you that I initiated the excursion and forged the orders; and thirdly, that I tell you I conspired with Eric Cannon to help him escape. The Die chose the second. But which is the truth seems to me to be still an open question.'

'But, but -'

'Steady, Inspector,' said Dr. Mann.

'But - What are you saying?'

'The Die told me to tell you that the Die told me to take the patients on an excursion to *Hair*.'

'But is that story the truth?' asked Inspector Putt, his face somewhat flushed.

Dr. Rhinehart shook a die onto the little coffee table in front of him. He examined the result.

'Yes,' he announced.

The inspector's face became redder.

'But how do I know that what you have just said -'

'Precisely,' said Dr. Rhinehart.

The inspector moved in a daze back behind his desk and sat down.

'Luke, you're relieved of all your duties at QSH as of today,' said Dr. Mann.

'Thank you, Tim.'

'I suppose you're still on our board of management for the simple reason that I don't have the authority to fire you from that, but in our October meeting -'

'You could forge Dr. Cobblestone's signature, Tim.'

There was a silence.





## Chapter Sixty

The Die is our refuge and strength,  
A very present help in trouble.  
Therefore will not we fear, though the earth be removed,  
And though the mountains be carried into the midst of the  
sea;  
Though the waters thereof roar and be troubled,  
Though the mountains shake with the swelling thereof.  
I had rather be a doorkeeper in the house of my Die  
Than to dwell in the tents of consistency.  
For the Lord Chance is a sun and a shield:  
Chance will give grace and glory and folly and shame:  
Nothing will be withheld from them that walk randomly.  
O Lord of Chance, My Die, blessed is the man that trusteth in  
thee.

— from *The Book of the Die*



ing to introduce some of their group members into dice-living. We varied who we were from one encounter or sensitivity group to the next, sometimes acting as a couple, sometimes as strangers.

I remember one time in particular: a weekend marathon we attended at the Fire Island Sensitivity Training Headquarters of Encounter Resources Society in late October, 1969.

As with most psychotherapies, FISTH provided mental first aid by the prospective rich (the therapists) for the already rich (the patients), and the dozen people at this marathon were representative Americans: a magazine editor, a fashion designer, two corporation executives, a tax lawyer, three well-to-do housewives, one stockbroker, a freelance writer, a minor TV personality and a mad psychiatrist - seven men and five women, plus, I should add, two young hippies present tuition-free, as an extra added attraction for the two-hundred-dollar weekend paying clients. I was one of the two corporation executives and Lil a well-to-do housewife (divorced). The leaders were Scott (small, compact, athletic) and Marya (tall, lithe, ethereal), both of whom were fully qualified psychotherapists. Our main meeting place was the huge living room of a huge Victorian house on the ocean outside Quogue, Fire Island.

Friday evening and all day Saturday we did a few loosening-up exercises to get to know each other better: we played pitch and catch for a while with the hippie girl; we had a tug of war; we stared into each other's eyes like used-car salesmen; we symbolically gangbanged the woman who had the first crying jag; shouted shits and cocksuckers at each other for an invigorating half hour; played musical chairs with half the group being sitters and the other half being chairs; played 'get the guest' with the minor TV personality, by taking turns seeing who could be the most obnoxious to her; played blind man's buff with everybody blind - except for Marya, who stood by whispering hoarsely, 'Really FEEL him, Joan, put your HANDS on him.'

By Saturday evening we were exhausted, but felt very close to one another and very liberated for doing publicly with strangers what previously we had only done privately with friends: namely, feeling each other up and calling each other shits and cocksuckers. The more bizarre games reminded me pleasantly of life on a dull day in a Dice Center, but every



Marya had him lowered to the floor, where she knelt by him and, smiling with half-closed eyes, suggested in a soft voice that he tell us the truth about everything. Before he could begin, though, Linda interrupted.

'Lie,' she said.

'Beg pardon,' he said, still smiling dreamily from the flowing caresses of being manipulated by a roomful of people.

'Tell lies,' Linda said. 'It's much easier.' She was seated against the wall opposite the fire with her feet tucked under her.

'Why, Linda, what are you saying?' Marya asked.

'I'm suggesting Hank really let go and just lie to us. Tell us whatever he feels like saying with no inhibiting effort to get at some illusion we call truth.'

'Why are you afraid of truth, Linda?' Marya asked, smiling. Her smile had begun to remind me of Dr. Felloni's nod.

'I'm not afraid of truth,' Linda answered with a slow drawl, half imitating Marya's. 'I just find it far less fun and far less liberating than lies.'

'You're sick,' contributed the burly tax lawyer.

'Oh I don't know,' I said from my corner of the room. 'Huck Finn was the greatest liar in American literature and he seemed to have a lot of fun and be pretty liberated.'

The sudden appearance of two challengers to the godhead of honesty was unprecedented.

'Let's get back to Mr. Hopper,' said co-leader Scott pleasantly. 'Tell us now, Hank, why were you so scared before.'

Mr. Hopper answered promptly: 'I was scared because you wanted truth, and both the answers I felt like making seemed to me to be half-lies. I was confused.'

'Confusion is only a symptom of repression,' Marya said, smiling. 'You *know* there are unpleasant aspects to your true feelings which you're ashamed of. But if you'd just share them with us, they'd no longer bug you.'

'Lie about them,' Linda said, stretching her lovely legs into the middle of the room. 'Exaggerate. Fantasize. Make up some junk that you think will entertain us.'

'Why do you want the spotlight?' Marya, smiling and tense, asked Linda.

'I enjoy lying,' Linda answered. 'And if I can't talk, I can't lie.'

'Ah come on,' said the magazine editor. 'What's so much fun about lying?'



that feelings and truth can be broken into parts?' Linda began taking off her blouse.

'I don't wish to cause embarrassment to anyone here,' Marya said. 'Our purpose is to get at real attitudes, real feelings, to . . . ah . . . ah, to explore . . . ah . . .'

But no one was paying much attention, since Linda, with serene concentration, had now removed her bra and her skirt and her panties and was sitting nude, legs apart, with her back to the wall. When she finished she had to smother another yawn. The firelight made a decidedly splendid effect on her white skin. For a while there was silence.

'Are you embarrassed, Linda?' Marya asked quietly, her face again frozen in a smile.

Linda sat silently with her back to the wall, looking at the rug between her legs. Tears began to form in her eyes. She suddenly drew up her knees, put her face into her hands and sobbed.

'Oh yes, yes,' she said. 'I'm ashamed! I'm ashamed!' She was crying.

No one spoke or moved.

'You needn't feel that way,' Marya said, getting on her knees and beginning to crawl toward Linda.

'My body is ugly ugly ugly,' Linda sobbed. 'I can't stand it.'

'I don't think it's ugly,' said Mr. Hopper, pushing his peanuts away from him off to the side.

'It's not ugly, Linda,' Marya said, putting a hand on her shoulder.

'It is. It is. I'm a slut.'

'Don't be silly. You can't really feel that.'

'I can't?' Linda asked, raising her head with a startled expression.

'Your body is beautiful,' Marya added.

'Yeah, I agree,' said Linda, abruptly sitting back and stretching out her legs again. 'Good round teats, good firm ass, juicy cunt. Nothing to complain about. Anyone want a feel?'

Everyone was caught leaning forward sympathetically with his mouth open and eyes bulging and nothing to say.

'If it's beautiful, touch it, Marya,' Linda added.

'I'll volunteer,' Mr. Hopper said.

'Not yet, Hank,' Linda said, smiling affectionately at him.

'Marya's got a thing about beautiful genitalia.'

We all looked at Marya, who hesitated, and, then, with tight-lipped determination, put her hands delicately on Linda's



shoulders, then her breasts. Her face relaxed a bit and she slid her hands down to the tummy and across the pubic hair and onto the thighs.

'You're lovely, Linda,' she said, sitting back on her heels and smiling a relaxed, almost triumphant smile.

'Would you like to suck me off?' Linda asked.

'No . . . no thank you,' Marya answered, flushing.

'Your love of beauty and all.'

'Is it my turn?' asked Mr. Hopper.

'What are you trying to prove?' Scott snapped out at Linda.

Linda looked over at him and patted Marya on her bare knee.

'Nothing,' she said to Scott. 'I just feel like acting the way I'm acting.'

'You admit you're just acting?' he asked.

'Of course,' she answered. Then she sat up and directed her sincere blue eyes at Mr. Hopper. 'I'm afraid a part of you is embarrassed by all this, right Hank?'

'Yes,' he said, and he smiled nervously.

'But part of you is enjoying it.'

He laughed.

'Part of you thinks I'm a nervy bitch.'

He hesitated and then nodded.

'And part of you thinks I'm the most honest one here.'

'You're damn right,' he answered abruptly.

'Which one is the real you?'

He frowned and seemed to be concentrating on self-analysis.

'I guess the *real* me is the one -'

'Oh shit, Hank. You're not being honest.'

'I'm not? I didn't even tell you which one -'

'But is one any more real than the next?'

'You sophist whore!' I blurted out.

'What's with you, Big Daddy?' Linda asked.

'You're a sick sophist hypocritical Communist nihilist slut.'

'You're a big handsome brainless nobody.'

'Just because you're pretty, you seduce poor Hopper into liking you. But the *real* Hopper knows you for what you are: a cheap, neurotic two-bit sophist anti-American divorcée.'

'Now just a minute -' Scott interrupted, leaning toward me.

'But I know her type, Scott,' I went on. 'Stagestruck since she first grew pubic hair, subverting her way into good men's pants with cheap, five-and-dime-store sophist sex techniques,



After we'd gotten most of the members of an encounter group to splinter off the original leader and meet only with us (as happened on Fire Island that weekend), they came to see that with us truth and honesty were irrelevant ; we approved good acting and bad, role playing and out-of-role playing, baddie roles and goodie roles, truth and lies.

When one individual would try to pretend to be his 'real' self and call the others back to 'reality', we would try to encourage our diceplayers to ignore him and go right on playing their dice-dictated roles. When someone else, as the result of playing out some role dammed up inside him for years, broke down and cried, the group would at first rally round the bawler to reassure him, as they'd gotten used to doing in traditional encounter groups. We tried to show them that this was the worst thing they could do ; the crier should be ignored or be responded to solely within the roles that were already being played.

We wanted them to come to realize that neither 'immorality' nor 'emotional breakdowns' earn either condemnation or pity except when the Dice so dictates. We wanted them to come to see that in group diceplay they are free of the usual games, rules and behavior patterns. Everything is fake. Nothing is real. No one - least of all us, the leaders - is reliable. When a person becomes reassured that he lives in a totally valueless, unreal, unstable, inconsistent world, he becomes free to be fully all of his selves - as the dice dictate. In those cases when the other group members respond conventionally to someone's breakdown, our work is undone: the sufferer feels frightened and ashamed. He believes that the 'real world' and its conventional attitudes exist even in group diceplay.

And it's his illusions about what constitutes the real world which are inhibiting him. His 'reality', his 'reason', his 'society': these are what must be destroyed.

All that fall Linda and I did our very best.

In addition to our work with various groups, Linda went to work on H. J. Wipple, a philanthropist whom I'd gotten interested in building a Dice Center for us in Southern California, and construction soon speeded up considerably. Work even began in renovating a boys' camp in the Catskills for a second Center. The world was getting ready for dicepeople.

Naturally Dr. Rhinehart felt a little guilty about leaving his wife and children without the slightest hint of when he'd return, but he consulted the Die, which advised him to forget about it. Then four months after he'd left home, a random Whim chose one of his random whims and ordered him to return to his apartment and try to seduce his wife.

Mrs. Rhinehart greeted him at two o'clock in the afternoon in a stylish new pants suit he'd never seen before and a cocktail in her hand.

'I've got a visitor now, Luke,' she said quietly. 'If you want to see me come back about four.'

It was not precisely the greeting Dr. Rhinehart had expected after four months of mysterious disappearance, and while he was rallying his mental faculties for a suitable riposte he discovered the door had gently been closed in his face.

Two hours later he tried again.

'Oh, it's you,' said Mrs. Rhinehart as she might have greeted a plumber just back with a fresh tool. 'Come on in.'

'Thank you,' said Dr. Rhinehart with dignity.

His wife walked ahead of him into the living room and offered him a seat, herself leaning against a new desk covered with papers and books. Dr. Rhinehart stood dramatically in the middle of the room and looked intently at his wife.

'Where you been?' she asked, with a tone of bored interest discouragingly close to what she might have used asking her son Larry the same question after he'd been out of the house for twenty minutes.

'The dice told me to leave you, Lil, and . . . well, I left.'

'Yes. I figured as much. What are you doing these days?'

Speechless for a few seconds, Dr. Rhinehart nevertheless managed to look intently at his wife.

'I'm doing a lot of work these days with group dice therapy.'

'How nice,' Mrs. Rhinehart said. She moved away from the desk over in front of a new painting Dr. Rhinehart had never seen before and glanced at some mail which was lying on a table beneath the painting. Then she turned back to him.

'Part of me has missed you, Luke.' She smiled warmly at him. 'And part of me hasn't.'

'Yeah, me too.'



'Er no, Lil, the details really aren't necessary. I'm . . . hmmm. I'm . . . well, what else is new?'

'I'm enrolled this fall at Columbia Law School.'

'You're *what*?'

'I gave the dice a choice of several of my lifelong daydreams and they chose that I become a lawyer. Don't you want me to broaden myself?'

'But *law school*!' Dr. Rhinehart said.

'Oh Luke, for all your supposed liberation you've still got an image of me as a helpless, beautiful female.'

'But you know I can't stand lawyers.'

'True, but have you ever slept with one?'

Dr. Rhinehart shook his head dazedly.

'You're supposed to be heartbroken, distraught, anxiety filled, helpless, desperate, incompetent -'

'Oh stuff that shit,' Mrs. Rhinehart said.

'Did Fred teach you such language?'

'Don't be a child.'

'True,' Dr. Rhinehart said, suddenly collapsing in a heap on the couch - it, he was glad to note, remained the same as from his old life. 'I'm proud of you, Lil.'

'You can stuff that too.'

'You're showing real independence.'

'Don't bother, Luke,' Mrs. Rhinehart said. 'If I needed your praise I wouldn't *be* independent.'

'Are you wearing a bra?'

'If you have to ask, it's not worth asking.'

'The Die told me to re-seduce you, but I can't see even where to begin.' He looked up at her as she leaned again against her new desk. She was smoking and her elbows stuck out sharply and she didn't look too mousy. 'I'm not in the mood for a knee in the groin.'

Mrs. Rhinehart dropped a Die onto the desk beside her and after looking at it said quietly to her husband:

'Out you go, Luke.'

'Where am I going?'

'Just out.'

'But I haven't seduced you yet.'

'You've tried and failed. Now you're leaving.'

'I haven't seen my children. How is my diceboy Larry?'

'Your diceboy Larry is fine. I told him when he came home from school this afternoon that you might be dropping by.'



## Chapter Sixty-three

It must be admitted that the thought of penetrating the hairy anus of a man or of being so penetrated held all the allure of giving or receiving an enema on the dais before the American Association of Practicing Psychiatrists. The thought of carressing, kissing and mouthing a male penis somehow dimly reminded me of being forced at the age of six or seven to eat baked macaroni.

On the other hand, the occasional fantasy of being a woman writhing beneath some dim male was exciting - until the dim male grew a beard (shaven or not), a hairy chest, hairy buttocks and an ugly vein-bulging penis. Then I lost interest. Being a female could, in an occasional fantasy, be exciting. Being a male having 'intercourse' with any precisely seen male seemed disgusting.

All of this I knew long before that November day in my habit-breaking life that the Die definitely asked me to shoulder the burden of going out into the world and being had. I went to the Lower East Side, where Linda told me I could find several gay bars, one of whose names in particular I remembered: Gordo's.

At about 10.30 P.M. I entered Gordo's, a perfectly harmless-looking bar, and was shocked to see men and women sitting together drinking. Moreover, there were only seven or eight people in the place. No one even looked at me. I ordered a beer and began doing research in my memory as to whether I had in fact repressed or misheard the true name of the gay bar. Gordon's? Sordo's? Sodom's? Gorkid? Morid's? Gornid's? Gorgon's! What a perfect name for a gay place! I went to the pay phone and searched for Gorgon in the Manhattan Directory. I drew a blank. Surprised and dejected, I sat in my booth and brooded out at the ineptly normal bar. For a moment I moved suddenly past the glass door of my booth toward the front of the bar. Where had they come from?

I left the booth and wandered toward the bar, where I saw some waiters leading to the upper floors from where I heard music. I wandered up, met the sticky feet of men and women and Brown defensive tackle who was coming in from the stairs and moved past him into a small room. I was



but he had an important touch-football game and had to rush away.'

'Is he practicing the dicelife, like a good boy?'

'Not very much. He says his teachers won't recognize dice decisions as a legitimate excuse for not doing homework. Now out, Luke, you've got to go.'

Dr. Rhinehart looked away out the window and sighed. Then he dropped a die on the couch beside him and looked at it.

'I refuse to leave,' he said.

Mrs. Rhinehart walked out of the room and returned with a pistol.

'The Die told me to make you leave. Since you deserted me, legally you have no right to be in this room without my permission.'

'Ahh, but my Die told me to try to stay.'

Mrs. Rhinehart consulted a Die on the desk beside her.

'I'm counting to five and if you're not out of here I'm going to fire.'

'Don't be silly, Lil,' Dr. Rhinehart replied, smiling. 'I'm not -'

'Two, three ...'

'Doing anything which merits such extreme measures. It seems to me -'

BAM!! The noise from the gun shook the whole room.

Dr. Rhinehart snapped up from the couch without undue delay and began moving toward the door.

'A hole in the couch is -' he began, trying to smile, but Mrs. Rhinehart had consulted the Die again and was counting to five and, having only a limited desire to hear her reach the end of the recitation, Dr. Rhinehart sprinted with all deliberate speed to the door and left.

It must be admitted that the thought of penetrating the hairy anus of a man or of being so penetrated held all the allure of giving or receiving an enema on the dais before the American Association of Practicing Psychiatrists. The thought of carressing, kissing and mouthing a male penis somehow dimly reminded me of being forced at the age of six or seven to eat baked macaroni.

On the other hand, the occasional fantasy of being a woman writhing beneath some dim male was exciting – until the dim male grew a beard (shaven or not), a hairy chest, hairy buttocks and an ugly vein-bulging penis. Then I lost interest. Being a female could, in an occasional fantasy, be exciting. Being a male having 'intercourse' with any precisely seen male seemed disgusting.

All of this I knew long before that November day in my habit-breaking life that the Die definitely asked me to shoulder the burden of going out into the world and being had. I went to the Lower East Side, where Linda told me I could find several gay bars, one of whose names in particular I remembered: Gordo's.

At about 10.30 p.m. I entered Gordo's, a perfectly harmless-looking bar, and was shocked to see men and women sitting together drinking. Moreover, there were only seven or eight people in the place. No one even looked at me. I ordered a beer and began doing research in my memory to see if I had in fact repressed or misheard the true name of the gay bar. Gordon's? Sordo's? Sodom's? Gorki's? Mordo's? Gorgon's? Gorgon's! What a perfect name for a gay place! I went to a pay phone and searched for Gorgon in the Manhattan directory. I drew a blank. Surprised and dejected, I sat in the booth and brooded out at the ineptly normal bar. Four young men moved suddenly past the glass door of my booth toward the front of the bar. Where had they come from?

I left the booth and wandered toward the back, where I saw some stairs leading to the upper floors; from above I heard music. I wandered up, met the steely gaze of some ex-Cleveland Brown defensive tackle who was sitting at the head of the stairs and moved past him into a small anteroom. From



culine. But where would I find a Zeus to my six-foot-four Ganymede? Where was the Great Cock that could split me in two? It would be much easier to find someone who saw in me the Awful Erection of his dreams. But ease was irrelevant. I needed to be a woman, to play the role of a woman. Even if I loomed over my husband like Mount Everest over a stunted shrub I must learn to spread myself supine before him. My femininity must be given freedom. The dice man could never be complete until he was a woman.

'Can I buy you a drink?' the man asked, standing above me like Everest above a stunted shrub. It was the ex-Cleveland Brown defensive tackle, and he looked down at me with world-weary knowingness. And a smile.



## Chapter Sixty-five

'I'm a virgin,' I said in a thin, delicate voice. 'Please be gentle.'



## Chapter Sixty-seven

'Christ,' I said heavily, 'am I going to be sore.'



## Chapter Sixty-eight

Dear Dr. Rhinehart,

I admire your work so much. My husband and I do our dice exercises every morning after breakfast and again before bedtime and we feel years younger. When are you going to have your own TV show? Before we began playing with emotional roulette and Exercise K we almost never spoke to each other, but now we're always shouting or laughing even when we're not playing dice games. Could you please give us some advice as to how we might better bring up our daughter Ginny to serve the Die?

She's a willful girl and doesn't say her prayers to It regular and is almost always the same sweet shy girl and frankly we're worried. We've tried to get her to do the dice exercises with us in the morning or by herself, but nothing seems to work. My husband beats her every now and then when the Die says to but it doesn't help much either. The only dicedoctor in these parts left for Antarctica three months ago so we have no one to turn to but you.

Yours by Chance,

Mrs. A. J. Kempton,  
(Missouri)

Dear Dr. Rhinehart,

I discovered my sixteen-year-old daughter on our living room couch with the postman this afternoon, and she related me to you. What the hell is this all about?

Sincerely Yours,

John Rush

The birth of the first dicebaby in the world was I suppose, an event of some historical importance. It was just after Christmas in 1969 that I got a phone call from Arlene announcing that she and Jake were rushing off to the hospital to have our dicebaby. They knew where I could be reached, since I'd stopped off two days before to give them each a Christmas present: Arlene a set of the *Encyclopedia Brittanica* and Jake a rakish bathing suit (Not my will, O Die, but Thy will be done).

When I arrived, Arlene was still in labor, and her private room was something of a messy jumble from two huge opened suitcases, filled, as far as I could see, entirely with baby clothes. I noticed at least thirty diapers with two green dice branded on each, and many of the pajamas, shirts, pants and tiny baby socks seemed to be similarly monogrammed. I found this to be in bad taste and told Arlene so while she was in the middle of a labor pain, but when she stopped groaning (she claimed it was mostly pleasurable), she assured me the Die had picked a one-in-three shot and ordered the monograms.

The three of us chatted about our hopes for the baby, with Arlene doing most of the talking. She told us that she had given 215 chances in 216 that she practice natural childbirth and breast-feed the child and that much to her delight the Die had chosen that she should do both. But most of her talk was about when the child should be potty trained and when it should be dicetrained.

'We've got to start early,' Arlene kept saying. 'I don't want our baby corrupted by society the way I was for thirty-five years.'

'Still, Arlene,' I said, 'for the first two or three years I think the child can develop randomly without using the dice.'

'No, Luke, it wouldn't be fair to him,' she replied. 'It would be like keeping candy away from him.'

'But a child tends to express all his minority impulses - at least until he gets to school. They may batten down the hatches there.'

'Perhaps, Lukie,' she said, 'but he'll see me casting dice to see which breast he gets or whether we go for a walk or whether he naps, and he'll feel left out. What I'd like to do is ...'

But she went into such a long labor pain and it



## Chapter Seventy

Dear Dr. Rhinehart,

I have been a fan of yours ever since I read that interview in *Playboy*. I have been trying to practice the dicelife now for almost a year but have run into several problems which I hoped you might be able to help me with. First, I was wondering if it were really necessary or important to follow the Die no matter what it says. I mean sometimes it vetoes something I really want to do or chooses the most absurd of the options I've created for it. I've found that disobeying the Die in such cases makes me feel real good, as if I were getting something for free. I find the Die most helpful in doing the things I want to do, mostly making girls. It's a big help there, since I never feel guilty when I try something that doesn't work since the die told me to do it. And I don't feel guilty when it does work since if the girl gets knocked up, it was the Die that did it. But why do you keep saying one should always follow the Die? And why bother to expand the areas it makes decisions in? I've got a good thing going and find a lot of your stuff distracts me from my end if you know what I mean.

Also I must warn you that when my girl took up using the dice and we tried some of those dice sex exercises some real problems developed. The sex exercises were fine, but my girl keeps telling me the Die won't let her see me anymore for a while. Sometimes she makes a date and then breaks it, blaming the Die. Aren't there some sort of rules I can impose on her? Do you have a code of dice ethics for girls I could show her?

Also another girl I introduced to the dicelife began insisting that I ought to include as an option that I marry her. I only give it one chance in thirty-six, but she insists I cast the dice about it every time I go out with her. What is the probability of my losing if I date her ten more times? Twenty? Please include a table or graph if possible.

You've got some good ideas, but I hope you do more thinking about how special rules might be developed for girl dice-people. I'm getting worried.

Sincerely,  
George Dorr



'This may be your greatest case study since "The Case of the Six-Sided man."'

Jake looked up at me, beaming.

'Maybe I ought to do some more experimenting with the dicelife,' he said.

'You'll need a title, of course,' I went on.

'You certainly should,' Arlene snapped at Jake. 'Any father of Edgarina Ecstein had better be a full-fledged diceperson or I'll disown and discredit him.'

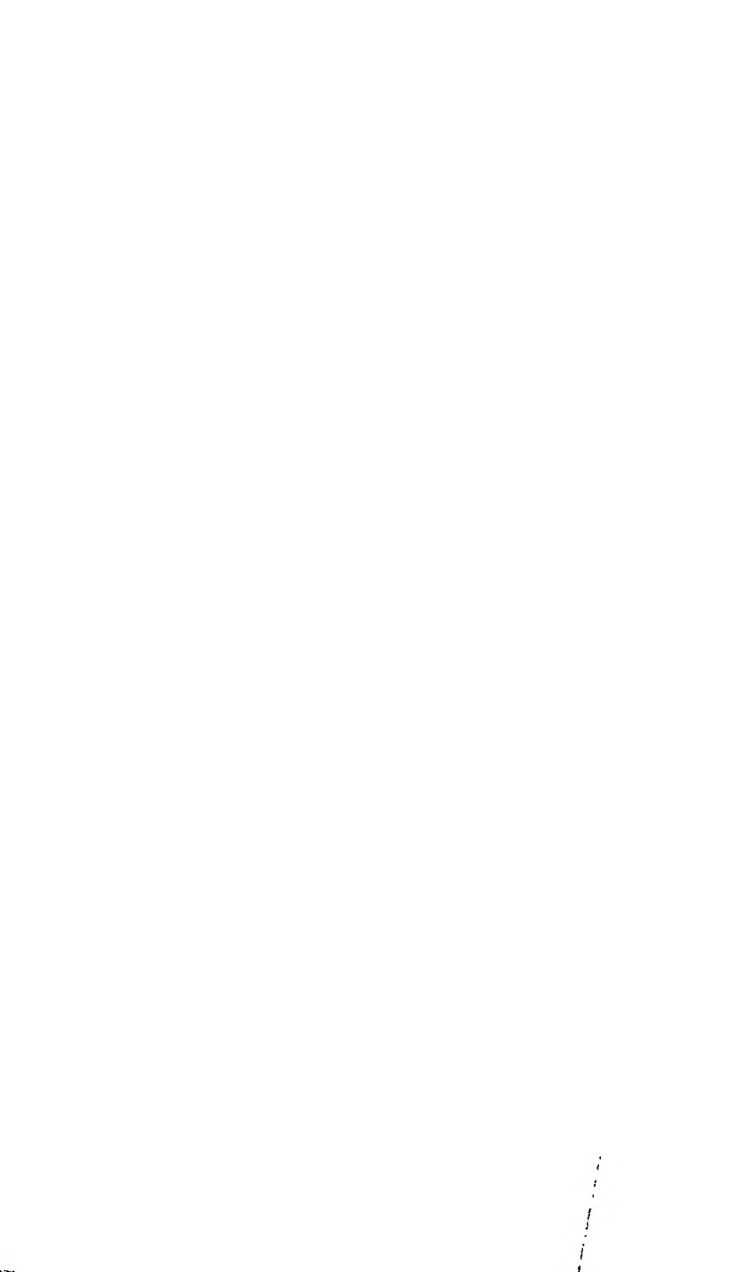
Jake sighed.

'That won't be necessary, honey,' he said.

'"A Case of Random Rearing,"' I suggested. 'Or perhaps, "Dieper Training."'

Jake shook his head slowly and then squinted aggressively up at me.

'Don't bother trying, Luke. It's beyond your depth. The title has already been made: "The Case of the Child of Whim."' He sighed. 'The book may take a little longer.'



past the rise of sand in front of me. Without my glasses it was only tan blur and blue blur.

'But don't you see,' I said. 'To know "me" that way is to limit me, cement me into something stonelike and predictable.'

'Diceshit! I just want to know a you that's soft and predictable. How am I supposed to enjoy being with you if I feel you can go "poof" any minute from some random fall of a die?'

I sighed and lowered myself back onto my elbows.

'Were I a healthy, normal neurotic human lover, my love might evaporate any moment in just as haphazard a fashion.'

'But then I could see it coming; I could run out on you first.' She smiled.

I sat abruptly up.

'Everything may evaporate at any instant. Everything!' I said with surprising vehemence. 'You, me, the most rocklike personality since Calvin Coolidge: death, destruction, despair may strike. To live your life assuming otherwise is insanity.'

'But Luke,' she said putting a warm hand on my shoulder. 'Life's going to go on more or less the same and ourselves too, If -'

'Never!'

She didn't speak. She slid her hand gently from my shoulder to the back of my neck and it played there with my hair. After a few moments I said quietly: 'I love you, Linda. The "I" that loves you will always love you. Nothing is more certain than that.'

'But how long will this "I" last?'

'Forever,' I said.

Her hand became motionless.

'Forever?' she said in a very low voice.

'Forever. Maybe even longer.' I turned on to my side and took her hand and kissed the palm. I looked into her eyes with a playful smile.

Staring seriously back at me, she said:

'But that "I" which loves me may be replaced by a different, unloving "I" and be forced to live forever underground and unexpressed?'

I nodded, still smiling.

'The "I" that loves you would like to arrange things so that the whole rest of my life is fixed to guarantee the continued





'Some things are naturally good and others aren't.'

'Mmmmmm,' I said.

'The dicelife sometimes takes us away from what's naturally good.'

'Mmmmmm.'

'I think that's too bad.'

I broke my mouth hold and hauled myself up on an elbow alongside her.

'Was that crazy slavery deal I created with you a natural and good thing?' I asked.

She smiled at me.

'It must have been,' she said.

'Everybody is always doing what seems to them to be naturally good. Why is everybody miserable?' I unhooked her bikini top and slid it off her onto the blanket. A ridge of sand lay across the upper half of each breast. I brushed it off.

'Everybody's not miserable,' she said. 'I'm not miserable.'

'You were before you discovered the dicelife.'

'But that's because before I had a sex hangup. Now I don't.'

'Mmmmmm,' I said, my mouth filled with her left breast and my right hand holding the warmth of the other.

'The Die is good for getting you over certain hangups,' she said, 'but then I think maybe it isn't so necessary any more.'

I unswallowed her breast, licked the taut nipple a few seconds and said:

'Personally, I think you may be right.'

'You do?'

'Certainly.' I untied the near side of her bikini bottom. 'I don't consult it about a lot of things,' I said. 'But when I'm in doubt, I find it nice to consult the Die.' I untied the far side of the bikini.

'But why bother?' Linda said. She had a hand now under my trunks and was pushing them down with the other.

'I consult the Die at dawn every day about whether I should consult it about everything during the day, about only the big things or not consult it at all under any circumstances. Today, for example, it told me not to consult it about anything.'

'So even your dicelessness is filled with the Die?'

'Mmmmmmmnnnnn.'

'So you're acting naturally today, huh?'

'MmmmmmmMmmmmmm.'

'I hope you're enjoying eating the sand down there.'

'Mmmmmm.'



'Some things are naturally good and others aren't.'

'Mmmmmm,' I said.

'The dicelife sometimes takes us away from what's naturally good.'

'Mmmmmm.'

'I think that's too bad.'

I broke my mouth hold and hauled myself up on an elbow alongside her.

'Was that crazy slavery deal I created with you a natural and good thing?' I asked.

She smiled at me.

'It must have been,' she said.

'Everybody is always doing what seems to them to be naturally good. Why is everybody miserable?' I unhooked her bikini top and slid it off her onto the blanket. A ridge of sand lay across the upper half of each breast. I brushed it off.

'Everybody's not miserable,' she said. 'I'm not miserable.'

'You were before you discovered the dicelife.'

'But that's because before I had a sex hangup. Now I don't.'

'Mmmmmm,' I said, my mouth filled with her left breast and my right hand holding the warmth of the other.

'The Die is good for getting you over certain hangups,' she said, 'but then I think maybe it isn't so necessary any more.'

I unswallowed her breast, licked the taut nipple a few seconds and said:

'Personally, I think you may be right.'

'You do?'

'Certainly.' I untied the near side of her bikini bottom. 'I don't consult it about a lot of things,' I said. 'But when I'm in doubt, I find it nice to consult the Die.' I untied the far side of the bikini.

'But why bother?' Linda said. She had a hand now under my trunks and was pushing them down with the other.

'I consult the Die at dawn every day about whether I should consult it about everything during the day, about only the big things or not consult it at all under any circumstances. Today, for example, it told me not to consult it about anything.'

'So even your dicelessness is filled with the Die?'

'Mmmmmmmnnnnn.'

'So you're acting naturally today, huh?'

'MmmmmmmMmmmmm.'

'I hope you're enjoying eating the sand down there.'

'Mmmmmm.'



Our Dice Centers. Ah, the memories, the memories. Those were the days: the gods played with each other on earth once more. Such freedom! Such creativity! Such triviality! Such utter chaos! All unguided by the hand of man, but guided by the great blind Die who loves us all. Once, just once in my life have I known what it means to live in a community, to feel part of a larger purpose shared by my friends and my enemies about me. Only in my CETREs have I experienced total liberation – complete, shattering, unforgettable, total enlightenment. In the last year I have never failed to recognize instantly those who have spent a month in one of the centers, whether I'd seen them before or not. We barge in on each other, our faces explode with light, our laughter flows and we embrace. The world will go steadily downhill again if they close all our CETREs.

I suppose you've all read in one place or another all the typical mass-media hysteria about them: the love room, the orgies, the violence, the drugs, the breakdowns into psychosis, the crime, the madness. *Time* magazine did a fine article about us entitled objectively: 'The CETRE Sewers.' It went as follows:

*The dregs of mankind have found a new gimmick: motel madhouses where anything goes. Founded in 1966 by naïve philanthropist Horace J. Wipple under the guise of therapy centers, the Centers for Experiments in Totally Random Environments (CETREs) have been from the first unabashed invitations to orgy, rapine and insanity. Based on the premises of dice theory first expounded by quack psychiatrist Lucius M. Rhinehart (Time, October 26, 1970), the Center's purpose is to liberate their clients from the burdens of individual identity. Those arriving for a 30-day stay in a Center are asked to abandon consistent names, clothing, mannerisms, personality traits, sexual proclivities, religious feelings – in brief, to abandon themselves.*

*The inmates – called 'students' – wear masks much of the time and follow the 'Commands' of dice to determine how they spend their time or who they pretend they*



changes which have occurred in their loved ones. "Irresponsible, erratic, destructive" was the way nineteen-year-old Jacob Bleiss of New Haven described his father after Mr. Bleiss returned from the Catskill (N.Y.) CETRE. "He can't hold a job, he's not home a lot of the time, he hits my mother and he seems stoned half the time only on nothing. He's always laughing like an idiot."

Irrational laughter, a classic symptom of hysteria, is one of the most dramatic manifestations of what psychiatrists are beginning to label the 'CETRE sickness.' Dr. Jerome Rockman of Chicago University's Hope Medical Center stated in Peoria last week:

"If I had been asked by someone to create an institution which would totally destroy the human personality with all its integrated grandeur – the striving, the moral questioning, the compassion for others and the sense of specific individual identity – I might have created CETREs. The results are predictable: apathy, unreliability, indecisiveness, manic depressions, inability to relate, social destructiveness, hysteria."

Dr Paul Bulber of Oxford, Mississippi, goes even further: "The theory and practice of dice therapy both in and out of CETREs is a greater threat to our civilization than Communism. They subvert everything which American society, indeed, any society, stands for. They should be wiped from the face of the earth."

Santa Clara District Court Judge Hobart Button perhaps summed up best the feelings of many people when he said to students Richards and O'Reilly: "The illusions that lead people to throw away their lives are appalling. The rush to drugs and to CETREs is like the rush of lemmings to the sea."

*Or the rush of rats into sewers.*

Time was, within the necessary limits set by fiction, totally accurate. Over the course of two years five of their reporters went through a month-long stay at a CETRE. The bitterness of the article may partly reflect that three of their hirelings did not report back to Time.

Ever since money contributed by Wipple, myself and others to the DICELIFE Foundation permitted us to build our first Dice Center, our CETREs have changed people. They destroy people for normal functioning within the insane society. It



all started when I realized that dice therapy worked slowly with most students because they always knew that other people expected them to be consistent and 'normal'; a lifetime of conditioning to respond to such expectation wasn't being broken by the partial and temporary free environments of dicegroups. Only in a *total* environment in which *nothing* is expected does a student feel the freedom necessary to express his host of minority selves clawing for life. And then, only by making the gradual change from the totally random environment of a CETRE through our 'Halfway Houses' to the patterned society outside can we make it possible for the student to carry over his dicelife of freedom into the patterned world.

The story of the development of the various centers and of our theory behind them will be told in detail in Joseph Fineman's forthcoming book *The History and Theory of Dice Centers* (Random Press, 1972). The best single rendering of how the centers work to change a man determined not to change can be found in 'The Case of the Square Cubed,' an autobiographical account by Dr. Jacob Ecstein. Jake's personal story was first printed in *The See of Whim* (April, 1971, vol. II, no. 4, pp. 17-33) but it is to be reprinted in his forthcoming book *Blow the Man Down* (Random Press, 1972). But for a general background, the Die has suggested I quote from Fineman's forthcoming book:

A student can enter only for a minimum of thirty days and must first pass an oral examination showing he understands the basic rules of the dicelife and the structures and procedures of the CETRE. He is told to come to the Center with absolutely *no* identifying personal possessions; he may use any names he wishes while at the Center but *all* names will be considered false. . . .

CETREs vary in their details. In the Creativity Rooms, the Die often commands a student to invent new and better features for our Random Environments and many procedures and facilities have been modified in this way, some changes remaining peculiar to a single Center and others being adopted by all. All CETREs are similar, however, to the original Corpus Die complex in Southern California.

Although each of the individual rooms in a Center has a student-invented name (e.g. the Pit, the God room, the Party room, the Room room, etc.) the names vary from

Center to Center. There are workrooms (laundries, offices, therapy rooms, clinics, a jail, kitchens), playrooms (emotion rooms, marriage rooms, love rooms, God rooms, creativity rooms), and life rooms (restaurants, bars, living rooms, bedrooms, moviehouse, etc) He must spend from two to five hours a day working at various dice-dictated jobs: he waits on table, sweeps out rooms, makes beds, serves cocktails, acts as a policeman, therapist, clothing clerk, mask maker, prostitute, admissions officer, jailer, etc. In all of these the student is dice-living and playing roles.

At first we kept most of the key positions filled with permanent, trained staff members: at least half the 'therapists' were real therapists; half the 'policemen' were real staff members; our 'admissions officer' 'real' and so on.

However, over our brief three-year history, there has been a gradual withering away of the staff. With carefully prepared structures and instructions we find that the third and fourth week students can handle most of the key roles as well as the permanent staff used to. The staff members vary their roles from week to week like the temporary students, who thus can't be certain at any time who is a staff member and who isn't. The staff members know, but *they can't prove it*, since anyone can *claim* to be a staff member. Whatever usefulness there is in having permanent, trained personnel in a CETRE rests in their having ability, not in their having authority.' [In our Vermont Center we experimented by withdrawing our permanent dicepeople one by one until the center was functioning without a single trained staff member - only transient students. After two months we infiltrate permanent staff members back in, and they reported that everything was proceeding as chaotically as ever; only a small amount of rigidity and structure had crept in during the two months in which the 'state' had totally withered away.]

In our structured anarchy [writes Fineman] the authority rests with the therapists (called Referees in most Centers), and with the policemen, *whoever they may be*. There are rules (no weapons, no violence, no roles or actions inappropriate to the particular game room in which you are acting, etc.) and if the rules are broken, a



[In the Pit our students often learn that, in the immortal words of Milton in his great sonnet to his blind wife, 'Those also serve who only lie and wait.']

At first there was no money in any of our CETREs, but we soon relearned that money is more basic perhaps than sex as a source of unfulfilled selves in our society. We now arrange that upon entering, each student receives a certain amount of real money to play with, the amount chosen by the Die from among six options listed by the student. He begins with from zero to three thousand dollars, the median amount being about five hundred dollars. When he leaves he has to cast again from among the same six options he listed when entering to determine how much his bill for his month-long stay will be. When he leaves he can take out any money he has saved, earned or stolen, less, of course, our randomly determined bill. . . .

Students receive wages for the work they do while in the Center and these wages are continually fluctuating so as to encourage students to work at certain jobs that need to be done.

Students who begin broke have to beg or borrow money for their first meal or else sell themselves to play some role for someone at a price. Prostitution – the selling of the use of one's body for the pleasure of someone else – is a common feature of all our Centers. This is not because it is the easiest way to obtain sex – sex is free in a variety of easily obtained forms – but because students enjoy selling themselves and enjoy being able to buy others. [It's perhaps the very essence of the capitalist soul.]

'During the last ten days of his thirty-day stay the student is free to go out and eat and live in the Halfway House, a motel located near the CETRE and staffed partially by our CETRE's [maybe], but mostly by the normal owner, a sympathizer, but not necessarily a dice person [maybe]. Until one of our students suggested such Halfway Houses, students were having trouble going from the freedom from expectation within the Center of the limitedness of expectation out in the society. [Living in a motel in which a sexy wench is *maybe* a dicestudent who knows she is roleplaying and maybe a normal one-role girl who only

partly knows it, has proven to be an excellent method of transition. The surly waiter is maybe 'real,' the great writer is maybe a writer and so on.]

The student has moved from a world in which everyone knows that everyone is acting to one in which only a few realize that everyone is role playing. The student feels much freer to experiment and develop his dice life when he knows there are a few other students around [maybe] who will understand, than he could feel in the normal world of rigid expectations.

We hope that a student comes to have two profound insights while staying at the motel. First, he suddenly realizes that perhaps he's actually at a 'normal' motel, that no other dice-people are there. He laughs and laughs. Secondly, he realizes that all other humans are leading chance-dictated multiple lives even though they don't know it and are always trying to fight it. He laughs and laughs. Joyfully he wanders back out onto the highway rubbing his dice together, barely aware that he has left the illusion of a totally random environment,

The writing of any autobiography involves numerous arbitrary decisions about the importance of events, and the writing about a dicelife by a diceperson involves arbitrariness multiplied to the nth degree. What should be included?

To the creator of the Dice Centers – the Die determined that I devote all of 1970 to their development – nothing is more important than the long, hard, complicated series of acts which resulted in the formation of Dice Centers in the Catskills; in Holby, Vermont; in Corpus Die, California; and, in the last year, elsewhere. At other times the sexual, love and writing adventures of my previous dicelife seem much more worth writing about.

In all cases, however, I faithfully consult the Die about how to proceed with each major section or event of my life. The Die chose that I devote thirty pages to my efforts to follow its November, 1970, decision that I try to murder someone, rather than that I write thirty pages about my efforts of that year to create the Dice Centers.

I asked the Die if I could throw in some letters from my fans and It said fine. Some dicestudents' experiences at the centers? Okay. An article I wrote for *Playboy* entitled 'The Potential Promiscuity of Man'? No, said the Die. Can I write in detail about my long, chaotic, unpredictable and often joyous relationship with Linda Reichman? Nope, not this book. Can I write about my ludicrous efforts to be a revolutionary? No, said the Die. About the dice decision that I write a four-hundred page comic novel about sex? Nope. Can I dramatize my troubles with the law, my experiences as a patient in the upstate mental hospital, my trial, my experience in jail? Yes, said the Die, if there's room. And so on.

One thing I've learned in my miscellaneous career is that any good creating that gets done gets done *despite* my efforts at controlling the writing, not because of them. In so far as I'm the Dice Man I can write easily in almost any form the Die chooses, but as serious, old, ambitious Luke, I run into as many blocks as a rat in an insoluble maze. Obedience of the Die implies with every fall that rational, purposive man doesn't know what he's doing so he might as well relax and enjoy the



town planning boards and other doctors every second of every day. Except for brief, anonymous sidetrips to various places to commit murder or rape or larceny or buy dope or help a revolution, I had to be straight as John Lindsay.

However, I sometimes enjoyed it. There is a bourgeois businessman in me that loves being given freedom to buy and sell, to practice public relations, to chair committees, to answer questions of reporters or public officials. The work of developing the CETREs went on too long for my residual self's taste, but I farmed out more and more of the control and the work to Fred Boyd and Joe Fineman and Linda (my God, without her dieing, we'd never have gotten *any* of the centers and our DICELIFE Foundation would be broke).

But though I've enjoyed living most of my roles, and enjoy writing about them all, they simply won't all fit in one book. Fortunately, I have faith that the Die will choose a good selection of events, and if It doesn't, the bored reader can simply flip dice a few times and let the Die choose a new book for the night.

Not my will, Die, but Thy will be done.





moiled and twitched. His face began to get red. Then, gradually, the moiling stopped and, white-faced, he said:

'Can't do it. Honesty. Trust. Don't know what love is.'

'Love me, please love me, please I'm -'

The teacher pulled Marie away and informed her that there was a request for her presence in one of the love rooms and she skipped off, leaving Dr. E still unloving.

Since self-pity is the hardest emotion of all for emotionless people to feel, the teacher made no further efforts with the basic emotions and took Dr. E to the marriage playroom.

'You have been unfaithful to your wife -' the teacher said.

'What for?' he asked.

'I am only suggesting options. Let us say then you have been faithful to her, but -'

The teacher was interrupted by a short, slightly fat, middle-aged woman coming in and marching up to Dr. Ecstein and screaming in his face:

'You viper! You swine! You beast! You betrayed me!'

'- wait a minute,' Dr. E stammered.

'You and that trollop! How could you?' She hit Dr. E a vicious blow on the side of the face, almost breaking his glasses.

'Are you sure?' he said, backing away. 'Why are you so upset?'

'Upset! The whole town talking about you and that cesspool behind my back.'

'But how can anyone know what never -'

'If I know about it, the whole world knows about it.' She hit Dr. E again less strenuously and collapsed on the couch in tears.

'It's nothing to cry about,' Dr. E said, coming over to comfort her. 'Infidelity is a minor matter, really nothing -'

'Ahhhhggg! ! ! !' she erupted from the couch, plowed her head into Dr. E's stomach and sent him crashing over an easy chair onto a telephone table and wastebasket.

'I'm sorry!' Dr. E. screamed. The woman on top of him was scratching at his face and he rolled desperately away.

'You bastard!' the woman shouted. 'Cold-hearted killer. You've never loved me.'

'Of course not,' Dr. E said, scrambling to his feet. 'So what's all the fuss about?'

'Ahhhggg ! ! !' she screamed and came at -







be recognized as Jake Ecstein, psychiatrist. He tried a new tack.

'What's your name?' he asked his wife.

'Maria,' she answered with a smile. 'And this is my boy, John.'

'Where's Edgarina?'

'My daughter is at home.'

'And your husband?'

Arlene frowned.

'Unfortunately, he has passed away,' she said.

'Oh great,' said Dr. E.

'I beg your pardon!' said she, standing abruptly.

'Oh, ah, sorry. I was overcome with disturbance,' Dr. E said, motioning his wife to sit. 'Look,' he went on, 'I like you. I like you very much. Perhaps we could stay together a while.'

'I'm sorry,' Arlene said softly. 'I'm afraid people would talk.'

'People would talk? How?'

'You are a colored man and I am white,' she said.

Dr. Ecstein let his mouth hang open and for the first time in his last nineteen years experienced something which he realized later may have been self-pity.



slightest doubt in the world that I would do it. Leaving Lil had been hard (although I sneer at my anxieties now), but killing 'someone' seemed no more difficult than holding up a drugstore or robbing a bank. There was a bit of anxiety because my life was being put in jeopardy; there was the excitement of the chase; and there was curiosity: what person shall I kill?

The great advantage of being brought up in a culture of violence is that it doesn't really matter who you kill: Negroes, Vietnamese or your mother – as long as you can make a reason for it, the killing will feel good. As the Dice Man, however, I felt obligated to let the Die choose the victim. I flipped a die saying 'odd' I would murder someone I knew, 'even' it would be a stranger. I assumed for some reason that the Die would prefer a stranger, but the die showed a 'one'; odd – someone I knew.

I decided that in all fairness one of the people I might kill was myself and that my name should take its chances with the rest. Although I 'knew' hundreds of people, I didn't think the Die intended me to spend days trying to remember all my friends so that I wouldn't deny any of them the option of being murdered. I created six lists each with six places for the names of people I knew, I put Lil, Larry, Evie, Jake, my mother and myself at the top of each of the six different lists. For second names on each list I added Arlene, Fred Boyd, Terry Tracy, Joseph Fineman, Elaine Wright (a new friend of that period) and Dr. Mann. For number threes: Linda Reichman, Professor Boggles, Dr. Krum, Miss Reingold, Jim Frisby (my new landlord in the Catskills) and Frank Osterflood. And so on. I won't give you the whole thirty-six, but to show I tried my best to include everyone, I should note that for the last six on each list I made six general categories: a business acquaintance, someone I had met first at a party, someone I knew only through letters or through reading (e.g. famous people), someone I haven't seen in at least five years, a CETRE student or staff member not previously listed and someone wealthy enough to justify robbing and killing.

I then casually cast a die to see from which of the six lists the die would choose a victim. The die chose list number two: Larry, Fred Boyd, Frank Osterflood, Miss Welish, H. J. Wipple (philanthropic benefactor of the Dice Centers) or someone I had first met at a party.

Anxiety flushed through my system like a poison, primarily





## Chapter Seventy-seven

### From the *Bhagavad-Gita*

To Arjuna, who was thus overcome by pity, whose eyes were filled with tears and who was troubled and much depressed in mind, the Lord Krishna said:

Whence has come to thee this dejection of spirit in the hour of crisis? It is unknown to men of noble mind; it does not lead to heaven; on earth it causes disgrace, O Arjuna.

Yield not to this unmanliness, O Arjuna, for it does not become thee. Cast off this petty faintheartedness and arise! I am thy Oppressor of the foes.

Arjuna said:

once come to be does he again cease to be. He is unborn, eternal, permanent and primeval. He is not slain when the body is slain. Therefore, knowing him as such, thou shouldst not grieve and thy duty shouldst be performed.  
Pick up thy die, O Arjuna, and kill.

(Edited for *The Book of the Die*)





hazard, and I was determined to commit a nice clean crime, without any sick emotions, without fuss, with dignity, grace and aesthetic bliss. I wanted to murder in such a way that Agatha Christie would be pleased and not offended. I wanted to commit a crime so perfect that no one would suspect anything, not the murdered, not the police, not even me.

Of course, such a crime would be impossible, so I retreated to my earlier ideal that I should murder without fuss, emotion or violence and with dignity, grace and aesthetic bliss. It was the very least I owed the victim.

But how? The Die only knows. I certainly couldn't see how. I would have to have faith. I would have to get myself with Osterflood and see what turned up. I'd never read of an Agatha Christie murderer proceeding in quite this way, but it was all I could do on twenty-four hours' notice.

'Frank, baby,' I said the next evening as he emerged from his taxi. 'Long time, no see. It's your old buddy Lou Smith; you must remember me. Good to see you again.'

I pumped his hand as the taxi pulled away and, still hoping to prevent him from uttering my name within earshot of the doorman, I threw my arm around his shoulder and whispered that we were being trailed and began marching him away.

'But Dr -'

'Had to see you. They're trying to get you,' I whispered as we moved up the block.

'But who's trying -'

'Tell you all about it at dinner.'

He stopped about thirty feet from his apartment.

'Look, Dr. Rhinehart, I ... I've got an important ... appointment this evening. I'm sorry, but -'

I had hailed another taxi and it careened over to our curb lusting after our East Side money.

'Dinner first. Got to talk first. Someone's trying to murder you.'

'What?'

'Get in, quick.'

Inside the taxi I got my first good look at Frank Osterflood; he was a bit heavier about the jowls than he had been *before* and seemed more nervous and tense, but it might have been his concern about dying. His hair was nicely trimmed and brushed, his expensive suit fit flowlessly, and he gave off



'Just now, a minute ago.'

'Abhh.'

We drove on in silence for a while, Osterflood twice looking behind us to see if we were being followed. He reported that we were.

'What's this appointment about tonight, Frank?'

'None of your business,' he answered quickly.

'Frank, I'm trying to help you. Someone may be trying to murder you tonight.'

He looked back at me uncertainly.

'I ... I've got a date,' he said.

'Ahhhh,' I said.

'But it's a woman that I ... that ... she likes money.'

'Where are you to meet her?'

'In ... er ... Harlem.' His eyes flicked off hopefully as a bus stopped beside us, as if it might contain a plainclothesman or CIA man or FBI man. There were undoubtedly a few of each, but they were out of his reach.

'Does she live alone?' I asked. It was six forty-eight.

'Uh ... Well, yes.'

'What is she like?'

'She's disgusting!' he spit out emphatically. 'Flesh, flesh, flesh - a woman,' he added.

'Ahh,' I said, disappointed. 'Do you think there's any chance at all that she might be involved in a plot?'

'I've known her three months. She thinks I'm a professional wrestler. No. No. She's horrible, but she's not - it's not her.'

'Look,' I said impulsively. 'Tonight the place for you to be is away from your apartment and out of public places. We'll have dinner in this out-of-the-way restaurant I know of and then we can all stay with this lady of yours.'

'Are you sure ...?'

'If anyone is going to try to kill you tonight, you can depend on me.'





It occurred to me on my drive to Harlem with Frank Osterflood after our uneventful dinner at an obscure restaurant in Queens that I might try to 'take him for a ride' to some dimly lit nowheres where mobsters drive to put other less successful mobsters away, but I didn't know any dimly lit nowheres, and besides, I was beginning to worry that Osterflood might turn his paranoic tendencies toward me and attack.

We arrived at the apartment house of Osterflood's 'date' at a little after eighty thirty-four that evening. We seemed to be somewhere near Lenox Avenue on 143rd Street or 145th Street - I never did find out which. My victim paid the cabbie, who looked resentful at being stuck in the middle of no-man's-land when he might be at the Hilton or Park Avenue. No one came close to us when we walked the thirty feet or so from the sidewalk to the door of the elegant and crumbling apartment building, although I sensed dozens of dark faces glaring at us in the deep dusk.

We clumped up the three flights of stairs together like a man and his shadow, I fingering my gun and Osterflood telling me to be careful of my footing. The sound of galloping horses and shouts came out of a first-floor apartment, high-pitched hysterical female laughter from the second floor, but from the third, silence. As Osterflood knocked, I reminded him firmly that my name was Lou Smith. I was a fellow professional wrestler. The incongruity of two professional wrestlers showing up to court a lady, one of them dressed with Brooks Brothers immaculateness and the other like a down-and-out hood escaped me at the time.

The woman who came to the door was a middle-aged fat lady with stringy hair, a double chin and a jolly smile. She barely seemed a Negress.

'I'm Lou Smith, professional wrestler,' I said quickly, offering my hand.

'Good for you,' she said and walked out past us and waddled on down the stairs.

'Is Gina here?' Osterflood called after her, but she stomped on down unheeding.

I followed him inside, through a small entranceway and into a fairly large living room, dominated by a huge television set



'Oh, that type,' she said. 'Fifty bucks.'

'Fifty bucks?'

'You heard me.'

'I see. It must be quite a show.' I looked back at Osterflood, who still stared at the subliminal floor show on the rug. 'I'll have to think about it.'

'I'd like another drink,' Osterflood said and, head lowered, reached out his long, nicely tailored arm with his glass and two ice cubes.

'The money,' she said to him without moving.

He pulled out his wallet and peeled out four bills of undetermined denomination. She ambled over to him, took the bills, fingered each of them carefully, then took his glass and disappeared back into the kitchen. She moved like a sleepy leopardess.

Osterflood said without looking over at me:

'Can't you stand guard outside?'

'Can't take the chance. The killer might already be inside the apartment.'

He glanced up and around nervously.

'I thought you said your date was disgusting?' I said.

'She is,' he said, and shuddered.

The disgusting flesh flesh flesh returned and fixed Osterflood his second drink and freshened her own. I was only sipping at mine, determined to keep my mind alert for the clean, aesthetic moment of truth. It was eight forty-eight by my watch.

'Look, mister,' Gina was saying in front of me again. 'Fifty bucks or out. This isn't a waiting room.' Her voice! If only she would never say a word.

'I see.' I turned to my friend. 'Better give her a fifty, Frank.'

He took out his wallet a second time and pulled off a single bill. She fingered it and stuffed it into a tiny pocket in her tiny leather skirt.

'Okay,' she said. 'Let's go.'

She walked over and turned on the television set, fiddling carefully with the dials and adjusting the volume quite high. When she moved away from the screen three young men were twitching away and playing loudly some rhythmic tune which was world-famous and which I almost recognized.

I was paying fifty dollars for this? No. Osterflood was paying. I relaxed.

'You want some hash tonight?' she asked Osterflood. He



ceilingward, but nude from the waist up. Her two breasts rose from her chest like two mounds of molded honey, with two neat circular sculpted crowns of brown sugar at the peak of each rounded, honeyed hill.

Without smoking she passed the pipe on to Osterflood on the other side of her. The pipe went flying off onto the living room floor on top of the buttons, the sweater and the bra. He had bashed at her hand.

'Get up,' Osterflood said.

Slowly, like a sated leopardess, she stood. I could see Osterflood now and he was staring at her bleary-eyed and without expression, neat in his soft, gray suit.

'You bitch,' he said dully. 'You cunt-caked bitch.'

I was smiling to myself without thought, leaning back and examining with aesthetic bliss the curve of Gina's right breast, which stuck out gracefully in front of her right arm like the prow of a boat nosing out from behind a cliff. An earnest American jawed aggressively with a greasy American just at the tip of the short bowsprit.

'You slut,' Osterflood said just a bit louder. 'You juicyjointed sewer. Shitslitted slut. Slime-oozing whore.'

Gina was fumbling with the belt and then one side of her leather skirt and after a moment or two, the skirt dropped like a guillotine to the floor at her feet. She was now totally nude. A long lovely scar ran down the back of one thigh.

'You bitch!' Osterflood screamed, and he staggered woozily to his feet and wobbled uncertainly for several seconds. There was a scream from the TV screen and I glanced idly over to see one of the Americans pick up one of the peasants and throw him onto a manure pile where another peasant could be seen struggling ineffectually.

I turned back just in time to see Osterflood grab Gina's curly dark hair and throw her back onto the couch. She bounced once, in segments, and then sat quietly, her large brown eyes looking vacantly at the ceiling.

'Feces!' shouted Osterflood. 'Female feces!'

I smiled friendlyly over at her.

'It's going to be a nice evening,' I said pleasantly.



One might even more honestly say *full* sexuality, were honesty one of our virtues.

I have been a woman on hundreds of occasions and I recommend that every other healthy, red-blooded American man be one too.





'Daddy? Why do I have to brush my teeth every day?' the little girl asked.

'Try this new tube I've got for you, Suzie, and you'll never ask that question again.'

[Close-up of a big long tube of Glare Toothpaste]

But I had to look away because Gina was kneeling on the floor, her hands tied behind her back with her bra, and Osterflood, with his pants and undershorts bunched at his feet but still dressed in white shirt, tie and suit jacket, was thrusting with his erect, pink weapon at her mouth, cursing her at every poke. I felt I was watching a slow-motion movie showing some huge piston at work, but some flaw in the machinery resulted in the rod's seeming frequently to miss the wide-open mouth which Gina, large-eyed and expressionless, was presenting. Osterflood's sword of vengeance against the female race kept sliding past her cheek or her neck or poking her in the eye. Whenever she would seem to have a good mouthful (she would close her eyes then), Osterflood would withdraw, raging, and thrust away sporadically, redoubling his curses. It wasn't clear whether he hated her more when she sucked him in or when he missed contact and bounced painfully off her forehead. In both cases he seemed like a movie director enraged because she, the actress, didn't mouth her lines correctly.

'Ahhhggg! How I hate you,' he yelled and lurched forward and collapsed onto the couch beside me. I smiled over at him.

He struggled sideways into a sitting position.

'Undress me, you disgusting, filthy hole,' he said loudly.

A cute, frightened peasant girl had joined the number-one earnest American and was pleading with him passionately about her corn crop. Without any apparent effort, Gina freed her hands and dropped the bra back onto the rug next to her skirt and sweater and the buttons and the pipe and came to the couch to undress him.

'Get me a drink,' he shouted to no one in particular as Gina tried to slide his pants over his shoes and off. She stood and said:

'Sure, honey. You want some acid?'



Gina was fighting with her right arm to raise herself and twist Osterflood off and out of her, but he bore down, pulling her hair with one hand and controlling her right arm with the other. His professional-wrestler role seemed to be paying off.

'Bitchbitchbitch,' he gasped, and the American was dragging the beautiful peasant girl through a cornfield and bullets were shattering the kernels every which way and Osterflood was banging Gina's head against the rug and the American tossed a grenade and whomp! the chink peasants were splattered like fertilizer over the cornfield and 'Diediedie-bitchbitch,' Osterflood hissed and with a supreme thrust deep into her anus they both screamed.

An unearthly silence filled the room. The beautiful peasant girl was looking with most frightened eyes from the pieces of peasant to the earnest American. 'My God,' she said.

'Steady,' the deep voice answered. 'We've won this round, but there's always more of them.'

Osterflood rolled off his conquered foe with a grunt, his weapon still cocked, but presumably discharged.

Gina's hilly form lay quietly for a few moments and then she got to her knees and stood up. Although she was still facing away toward the TV set, I could see blood running in a tiny stream down the right corner of her mouth and something was smeared down the inside of one thigh. Slowly she moved off to the left and disappeared into what seemed to be a bathroom.

I was perspiring a good deal and a lady was smiling ecstatically as she held up her laundry and I found myself sailing over to the liquor cabinet and fixing three more drinks, adding mostly melted ice.

Osterflood was lying on his back when I sailed back again but he sat up to take the drink I offered him. He stared wild-eyed at me.

'I'm going to be killed,' he said.

I'd forgotten all about that.

He clutched at my pants leg, spilling part of his drink on the rug.

'I'm going to die. I know it. You've got to do something.'

'It's all right,' I said.

'No, no, it's not, it's not. I feel it strongly. I deserve to die.'

'Come into the kitchen,' I said.

He stared wild-eyed at me.

'I want to show you something,' I added.



Gina had returned from wherever she had been and was standing over Osterflood, sweat glistening lightly on her chest and forehead. Her child's face peered down at him as at an interesting toad. Osterflood was groaning and writhing mildly on the rug. Then he stopped and said quietly.

'Whip me.'

Gina leaned down to her left and picked up her leather skirt and stepped into it, buttoning it loosely at her hips. She drew out the leather belt.

'Would you two like a drink first?' I asked, holding the three Scotch drinks on a tray before me.

Osterflood didn't seem to hear me, intent instead upon some inner light. Gina reached her free hand out and took one of the two harmless drinks and took a big swig from it.

'Frank, would you like -' I began.

Whack!

The belt burst across Osterflood's thighs like a cannon shot. He grunted and turned over onto his stomach.

Whack! it came across his buttocks; whack! across the back of his thighs. His powerful body arched in pain and then when Gina paused, collapsed trembling.

I noticed now a bloody gash on Gina's shoulder and blood mixed with saliva was still sliding from her lower lip. She looked down at Osterflood and in a single swift terrifying motion slashed the belt across his back. Three or four pinkish welt lines were now clearly etched on his body.

'Ahh,' I said. 'Is this part of the regular show?'

She stood without answering, breathing deeply, a single line of sweat now running from the side of her neck down in between her breasts, which rose and fell moistly.

'I'm dying, I'm dying,' Osterflood moaned. 'Beat me, please beat me.'

'You white pig,' she said in a soft voice. 'Fat, man pig.'

Thock!

I absentmindedly took a sip from one of the drinks and spat it out on the rug. Wrong drink.

A burst of applause flooded into the room and I glanced over to see a pompous little dictator parading down the aisle of an auditorium to the applause of formally dressed spics, or chinks, or gooks or greasies.

'Drink,' I heard a voice say.

Osterflood had gotten now to his knees and was reaching



of motion endlessly plunging and being plunged, biting and being bitten, rising and sinking, filling and emptying, and I felt something scratching at my leg.

'A drink,' Osterflood was saying. 'A drink, you fucking killer. One last drink.'

Reluctantly, I tore my hands away from Gina and dream-walked over to the couch and got him the desired drink.





Osterflood was contorted on his hands and knees grunting incoherently and clutching at his stomach while the belt whacked! across his back twice more.

Canned hilarious laughter from the TV flowed hilariously across the room along the rug bubbling hilarious over Osterflood's twisted torso up Gina's long, sweat and semen-stained legs, over taut, dripping breasts, over my wet mouth drooling on her neck down my moisture-streaked chest and belly to bubble and reverberate hilariously at last in the endless sensuous roll and moil of my mighty oiled meat in the fold upon fold of Gina's molten, honeyed, holy-motioned, slow-rolling holy bowl. She was moaning now, holding the belt lifelessly at her thigh; I was growing and flowing in that holy motion of creation, my open hands sliding around her weary arms to enclose again her moistened round rubbery taut-tipped mounds.

A handsome, silly-looking man said:

'But I don't like sex!' and laughter roared out at us like the bray of an ass. Osterflood was mumbling about never doing it again and the little bitches and if only boys would something and beatmebeatme. He had drunk two-thirds of the glass of Scotch and strychnine I'd given him, but spit the rest out claiming it was poison.

I felt Gina's hand clutching at my balls and pressing herself back upon me and then she suddenly broke away, stepped over Osterflood as if he were a pool of vomit on the rug and got a straight-back chair, and placed it in the middle of the rug a few feet from him. I was tearing off the last of my clothes as fast as I could in a movie that always seemed to be in slow motion, but even before I'd finished or was even seated on the chair, Gina had guided the divine tool back into her, thrown her legs around me and, with a child's contented sigh, begun moving her boiling meat on my stiff bone.

One brief second she stared with wide brown eyes into mine and then her lips and mouth struck and we were engaged in two flowing worlds. Like midget octopi, my giant hands moiled and toiled at the great round rubber bowls of her buttocks and I squeezed and she churned and I pulled and she pressed



said and the actors paused to let the machine roar away its bubbled laughter.

Gina stood again now over Osterflood, the belt still in her hand – she hadn't released it from her hand since her first blow twenty minutes before. Osterflood was on his back, arcing it slightly, his feet toward the couch. He was grinning moronically, his eyes bulging and his cock stiff.

'I never meant to ...' he was muttering. 'Nice boys nice girls ... mistake ... I'm sick, I'm sick ... dying ... see that now ... NEVER AGAIN ... be a good boy, Mommy, beat me BEAT ME.'

Gina stepped over him with one leg so she straddled his head and shoulders and faced his feet. She leaned forward a few inches and let a gob of spit fall on to his belly.

'Now, Joanie, there's something I must tell you tonight,' the husband was saying.

'Sure, Dad, but make it quick, Jack's coming with his motorcycle.'

Gina, smiling a child's soft smile, raised her arm and swept it down *thock!* the belt tearing across his thighs. Again she raised it – fascinating to watch the coil of her wet flesh, semen streaking the inside of her spread thighs, the breasts trembling as she hesitated at the top of the arc – and then *whack!* across his belly and extended rod. He screamed and vaulted his back, the grin still there, laughter from the television set spitting into the room like froth from a mad dog.

Osterflood's moans and mumbles were mostly incoherent now, and Gina rose and struck twice more with all her force, he now totally vaulting his back as if raising his stomach and thighs to embrace the hissing belt.

'Teen-agers today are so violent,' the silly woman said to a silly woman friend as they walked their dogs.

Gina came back toward the couch, large eyes smiling at me, and took into her warm mouth my now boneless meat and sucked and chewed at it with good appetite. I smiled and stared stupidly at the image of two men on the screen, unearnest, silly men, talking earnestly about the horsepower of their earnest cars and of drag racing against their son's earnest motorcycles.

Gina, her head bent back now, breasts trembling, had cupped my balls and buttocks with her hands and was forcing my now bulging, slimy, hot-tipped cock deeper into her



raised it to his lips and began gulping. Ssssst *Thack!* The belt tore across the hand and the glass and water spilled to the floor.

'That wasn't very nice,' I said, wondering if Osterflood were immortal.

She smiled bright-eyed at me, like a schoolgirl who has just accomplished a particularly good trick with a jump rope.

'Save me, Rhinehart, save me,' Osterflood mumbled and clawed at my knees. But without Gina's striking him again he abruptly rolled on to the floor and vaulted his back. Gina smiled at him, but he stayed in his vaulted position; he was in another convulsion. As I watched, the belt fell lightly across my hair to my shoulder and Gina looped it so that she had me around the neck with the belt as noose and led me to the chair and forced me down into it.

She straddled me, lowering herself in little dips against the stiff cock which she maneuvered first against and slightly into one hole and then the other and then she slid over me, burying the cock deep within her. We rubbed now, and bit and clawed, and squeezed and pinched and sucked and laughter poured over us and Osterflood gurgled and choked and a voice said, 'So it isn't bees after all,' and I rose up and holding Gina tight to me by the buttocks I fell to a kneeling position on the rug and then forward on top of her she already coming in a frenzied pelvic pulsation sucking and biting at my shoulder and I rammed and Osterflood gurgled and I rammed at her rammed and rammed and rammed my mouth filled with breast and laughter flowing over us ramming ram and it ah flowed out hot ah molten wet lava pouring into her in ah in ah in and ram once more time GOOD AH ah ah good good good seeing Osterflood to my left beautiful grinning lying on his side knees drawn toward his belly his face beautiful twisted in its hideous grin his cock stiff his belly spilling his semen pools onto the rug his eyes open glassy, staring, fixed, unmoving, dead.

## Chapter Eighty-six

The Die giveth and the Die taketh away. Blessed be the name  
of the Die.

Dear Mr. Rhinehart and Company,

We are deeply indebted to you here at Fedel's for the fine catalytic effect your theory of the dice life has had on sales and profits and on our lives. My business life had been giving me less and less satisfaction over the years. I had the usual ulcer and mistress, and I divorced my wife and took a dose of LSD or something and went to discotheques, but nothing helped: my profits and my indifference remained steady. Then I read an article about you in *The New Yorker* which I detest and never read, and located a follower of yours here in Columbus and I and my business haven't been the same since.

The first thing the dice told me to do was raise wages across the board thirty percent and write commending personal letters to everyone. Efficiency jumped forty-three percent that month (it dropped back twenty-eight percent the next). Then the dice ordered me to stop manufacturing conventional hats (the family product for sixty-seven years), but to make experimental hats. My designers went out of their minds in ecstasy. Our first line of hats (you may have read about them in *Ladies' Wear*) was the highly successful 'Boat Sombbrero,' essentially a cowboy hat with a brim that tapers flush to the peak at the sides but flows out four inches in front and back.

Although our profits declined fifteen percent, our sales leapt twenty percent and I wasn't bored anymore. Our second design was the rainhat that looks like a Ku Klux Klan hood and is made of brightly colored plastic suitable for both sexes. It's not going well at all (except in the South) but all of us at Fedel's think it's great. My profits turned at this point into a loss, but the Die's will be done.

The Die then insisted we drop our number one money-making line of cheap men's expensive hats. Our retailers were appalled, but we were so engrossed in our third experimental design (the designer claims the Die made a key decision on it) that we didn't care. The 'pancake' or 'halo' (we haven't consulted the Die yet) is a disc-shaped headgear that works on the principle of the academic mortar board, but comes in a variety of colors, materials and shapes, although it is usually





## Professor Boggles at a CETRE

Dear Luke,

I am a rational, linear, verbal, discursive, literary man and even your previous absurdities prepared me only minimally for the shock of my first week in the Catskill CETRE. I fully expressed anger, played Hamlet, pretended to be a fool, acted like an enraged tiger; I even swished my considerable hips effeminately when the Die tried to turn me into a woman. However, I did all this in isolation; I saw to it that none of my role playing involved active interaction with other people. When other people attempted to impose their 'selves' on me I became cynical inside, no matter what I was halfheartedly doing outside.

A middle-aged woman grossly importuned me to seduce her and the Die dictated that I ought to respond favorably. I found myself slobbering on her neck and squeezing her expansive bosom but feeling totally detached. My phallus remained detumescent. After five minutes she huffed off to someone else.

My awakening came on the fifth day, in the creativity room. The Die had chosen for me the assignment to write four pages using a new language - one employing primarily words from known vocabularies but combining them in a new grammar, syntax and diction. I was to try to express real feelings. I sat for an hour and couldn't get past doodles. Then I finally wrote a sentence:

'Muckme piddles ping pong poetry.'

I liked the sound of it but the syntax was too regular. I wrote a second:

'Skinned. Skinniedup, baked. Stick a.'

That I felt was better, but lacking in verbs.

'Farceuncle midwoof floops on the cooch Harkening strayers at the dolor.'

I smiled to myself: I felt I was getting closer to truth.

'Missy-led clanker retchatches purr purr floops midwoof flushiting. I wunted crandy. Yo no crandy git, dabby sated. Yo knotted again, he replied jobbily. Fluckit shushit. Hotbam master.'



*[Being a questioning of Dr. Lucius Rhinehart by Inspector Nathaniel Putt of the New York City police regarding the unfortunately rigidification of Mr. Franklin Delano Osterflood.]*

'It's good to see you again, Inspector Putt,' Dr. Rhinehart said. 'How have you been?'

'Fine, thank - Sit down, Rhinehart.'

'Thank you. You've got a new couch.'

'You know why I've called you in?'

'No, I'm afraid I don't. Lost some more mental patients?'

'Do you know a man named Frank Osterflood?'

'Yes, I do. He was a -'

'When did you last see him?'

Dr. Rhinehart pulled out a die, shook it in his cupped hands and leaned forward to drop it on the inspector's desk. After examining the results he said:

'About a week ago.'

Inspector Putt's eyes glittered minutely.

'You ... saw ... him ... one week ago.'

'Yes, about then. Why? What's Frank up to these days? Nothing serious, I hope.'

'Please describe your meeting with him.'

'Mmmmm. I remember I ran into him purely by chance on the street near his apartment. We decided to go to dinner together.'

'Go on.'

'After dinner, he suggested we go visit a girlfriend of his in Harlem. So we went.'

'Go on.'

'I spent a couple of hours with Osterflood with his girlfriend and then I left.'

'What took place at this girlfriend's place?'

'We watched some television. And, well, Osterflood engaged the girl in sexual congress and then I engaged her in sexual congress. It was a joint session you might say.'

'Did Osterflood leave with you?'

'No. I left alone.'

'What was he doing when you left?'

'He was sleeping on the living room rug.'





'Ahh, four! That shows initiative, Gina. It would be a shame to waste those witnesses.'

Dr. Rhinehart retrieved his die from the desk and dropped it onto the couch beside his thigh.

'I left with Osterflood, Inspector.'

'Where did you go?'

'Where did we go, Gina?'

'You took a tax -'

'Shuttup! Get her out of here.'

Gina was removed from the room by the detective.

'We got in a taxi, I believe. I got off at the Lexington Avenue subway stop at 125th Street. I needed to relieve myself. Osterflood went on. He was quite drunk and I felt slightly guilty about leaving him with a suspiciously cheerful cabbie, but I was drunk too. I found a urinal near -'

'Why did you lie to us the first time?'

'Who says I lied to you the first time?'

'You've just changed your story.'

'Details.'

'Gina's witnesses exposed your lie.'

'Come now, Inspector, you know full well that her four witnesses are even less reliable than the dice, and that's going some.'

'Shuttup!'

'And besides, the Die told me to change the story.'

The inspector was glaring at Dr. Rhinehart.

'You'd better consult your dice again,' he said. 'No cabbie in the city remembers picking up two big white men in Harlem that evening, or for that matter any evening in the last five years. You, as a doctor, would have recognized the symptoms of strychnine poisoning as different from simple drunkenness. We know Gina and her four witnesses are lying. We know you're lying. We know Osterflood was murdered at Gina's and never left there alive.'

Inspector Putt and Dr. Rhinehart stared at each other.

'Wow!' Dr. Rhinehart said after awhile. He leaned forward on the couch, wide-eyed, attentive, interested, and asked intently: 'Who killed him?'

## Chapter Ninety

Dear Doc,

The Die told me to write you. Can't think of much to say,

Die bless you,

Fred Weedmuller,

Porksnout, Texas.



A week after my interview with him, Inspector Putt announced to anyone who was interested that new evidence (undisclosed) indicated conclusively that Osterflood must have committed suicide probably. Privately, he informed friends and informers that it was clear he couldn't possibly get a conviction against either Gina or me. Gina wouldn't have murdered Osterflood so premeditatedly in her own apartment with another white man present, and strychnine, he noted, is not the usual mode of murder of 'abused Harlem whores.' Moreover, her four witnesses, while obviously they were lying, nevertheless would raise a shadow of doubt in the minds of a few radlib jurors.

Dr. Rhinehart would be impossible to convict because no jury, radlib or one hundred and ten percent American, could be expected to understand Rhinehart's motivation. The inspector admitted he himself wasn't certain he understood it. 'He did it because the dice told him to,' the D.A. would proclaim and the defense attorneys would lead the general laughter which would follow. The world was changing too rapidly for the typical juror, no matter how American, to keep up. Moreover, even Inspector Putt was beginning to doubt that Rhinehart had done it, for, though he was certainly capable of murder, Rhinehart, if the Die had told him to do it, would clearly not have done such a debauched, confused, messy, un-aesthetic, incompetent job of it.

Nevertheless, Inspector Putt had called me for one last confrontation and had concluded a long lecture with the ringing words:

'Someday. Rhinehart, the law is going to catch up with you. Someday the furies are going to come home to roost. Someday the sins you are committing in the name of your dice games are going to be taken out of the bank. Someday, you will learn, crime, even in the United States, does not pay.'

'I'm sure you're right,' I said, shaking his hand as I left. 'But is there any hurry?'

So my dicelife went on. I gave the Die one chance in six that I do everything in my power to bring Osterflood back to life again, but the option lost out to another one-in-six shot:

that I spend three days in mourning for Frank, and that I compose a few prayers and parables for the occasion.

On January 1, 1971, I had my third annual Fate Day to determined my long-range role for the year. The Die was given the options that (1) sometime that year I marry Linda Reichman, Terry Tracy, Miss Reingold, or a woman chosen at random (I felt that if I couldn't make a go of a dicemarriage with someone, then the nuclear family might be in danger); (2) I give up the dice for the year and begin an entirely new career of some sort (this no longer frightening option was inspired by Fuigi Arishi's article I had read that day on 'The Withering Away of the Die'); (3) I 'begin revolutionary activity against the established clods of the world, my purpose being to expose hypocrisy and injustice, shame the unjust, awaken and arouse the oppressed and, in general, to wage an unending war against crime: namely, to smash society as radically as I am trying to smash society in me' (I'd read a month or two before that Eric Cannon and Arturo Jones had formed an underground revolutionary group and the memory that day made me feel heroic: I wasn't sure what my words meant that I *do*, but the ring of them made me sit proud on the living room rug where I was preparing to cast the dice); (4) I work during the year on books and articles and novels and stories about whatever the Die dictated, completing at least the equivalent of two books (I resented the bum job of publicity work that was being done for our Dice Centers and The DICELIFE Foundation and vaguely pictured myself coming to the rescue); (5) I continue my multiple activities in promoting diceliving throughout the world, the nature of my contribution to be determined by the Die (it's what I most felt like doing: Linda and Jake and Fred and Lil were all sporadically part of our diceteam, and the dicelife without other dicepeople is often lonely); and (6) I spend the whole year limiting my options to the duration of one day only, so that, indeed (to quote the inspired rhetoric of my '71 Fate Day), 'each day's dawning bring a new birth, while others ignore it and grow old.' (This last option fascinated me since I always find long-range options something of a drag: they tend to make me too patterned, even if it is the pattern of the Die.)

But the Die, testing me, tumbled down a 'four': that 'I work during the year on various writing projects.' Two subsequent dice decisions soon determined that I was to complete sometime during the year 'an autobiography of exactly



RELIGION FOR OUR TIME

presents

[The camera pans from one figure to the next of the five people seated on the slightly raised stage in front of the lobby or so people in the audience.]

Father John Wolfe, assistant professor of theology at Fordham University; Rabbi Eli Fishman, chairman of the Ecumenical Center for a More United Society; Dr. Elton Dan, professor of psychology at Princeton University and noted atheist; and Dr. Lucius M. Rhinsham, psychiatrist and controversial founder of the Religion of the Die.

'Welcome to another live, free, open, spontaneous and completely unrehearsed discussion in our series about Religion for Our Time. Our Subject today:

IS THE RELIGION OF THE DIE A COP-OUT?

[Image of Mrs. Wippleton.]

'Our moderator for today's program: Mrs. Nora Wippleton, former screen and television actress, wife of noted financier and socialite Gregg Wippleston and mother of four lovely children. Mrs. Wippleton is also chairman of the First Presbyterian Church's Committee for Religious Tolerance. Mrs. Wippleton.'

She bursts into a smile and speaks with enthusiasm.

'Thank you. Good afternoon, ladies and gentlemen. We are fortunate today to have a very interesting subject for discussion and one I'm sure you've all wanted to learn more about: the Religion of the Die. We also have a very distinguished panel to discuss it. Dr. Rhinsham. Image clicking briefly to Dr. Rhinsham. Who dressed totally in black with a heavy black turtleneck sweater and suit looks vaguely ministerial. He chews on his lower lip and smokes a large pipe throughout. is one of the most controversial figures of the last year. His papers and books on the theory and therapy have scandalized the psychiatric world and he's reading from *The Book of the Die* have scandalized the religious world. He has earned from the American Association of Theologians...

Condemnation. Nevertheless, many individuals have rallied round Dr. Rhinehart and his religion, some of them not in mental hospitals. Last year Dr. Rhinehart and his followers began opening Dice Centers called Centers for Experiments in Totally Random Environments and thousands of people have gone through these centers, some reporting deeply religious experiences, but others suffering severe breakdowns. No matter how opinions differ, all agree that Dr. Rhinehart is a very controversial man.

'Dr. Rhinehart, I'd like to open our discussion by asking you our central question for today, and then asking each of our other guests to comment on the same thing: "Is your religion of the Die a Cop-out?"'

'Sure,' says Dr. Rhinehart, chewing contentedly on his pipe, then he remains silent. Mrs. W. looks first expectant and then nervous.

'How is it a cop-out?'

'In three ways.' Again R. chews wordlessly on his pipe, serene and satisfied.

'In what three ways?'

R. lowers his head and the camera pans down to see him rubbing something between his hands and then drop onto the small table in front of him a die; it is a six. When the camera pans back up to his face the viewer sees R. looking directly out from the screen. With a benevolent glow, he holds his pipe steady and smokeless, looking at the viewer. Five seconds, ten seconds pass. Fifteen.

'Dr. Rhinehart?' says a feminine voice off-screen. Image shifts to a serious Mrs. W. Then back to R. Then to Mrs. W., frowning, then to R., exhaling smokeless air from an open mouth. Then, uncertainly, appears the image of Father Wolfe, who looks as if he's concentrating on what he's going to say.

'Rabbi Fishman. Perhaps you'd like to lead off today,' says the off-screen feminine voice.

Rabbi Fishman, short, dark and fortyish, directs his words intently first toward Mrs. W. and then to R.

'Thank you, Mrs. Wippleton. I find everything Dr. Rhinehart has said this afternoon extremely interesting, but he seems to be missing the chief point: the religion of the Die is a resignation from the status of man: it is a worship of chance, and as such, a worship of that which has always been man's adversary. Man is above all else the great organizer, the great integrator, while a dicelife as I understand it, is a destroyer of

integration and unity. It is a cop-out from human life, but not into the life of random nature as some of Dr. Rhinehart's critics have maintained. No. Nature, too, is an organizer and an integrator. But the religion of the Die represents in a way the worship of disintegration, dissolution and death. It is anti-life. I find it another sign of the sickness of our times.'

[Camera pans smoothly back to Mrs. W.]

'That's very interesting, Rabbi Fishman. You've certainly given us much food for thought. Dr. Rhinehart, would you like to comment?'

'Sure.'

R. stares again serenely out at the television audience, benignly chewing on his pipe. Five seconds, ten, twelve.

'Father Wolfe,' says Mrs. W.'s high-pitched voice.

'My turn?'

[Image of round, red-faced blond-haired Father Wolfe, looking at first uncertainly off toward Mrs. W., then staring into the camera like a prosecuting attorney.]

'Thank you. The religion of the Die is, no matter how Dr. Rhinehart may try to weasel out of it this afternoon, the worship of the Antichrist. There is a moral law, er, a moral order to the universe which God created, and the surrender of one's free will to the decisions of dice is the most outrageous and complete crime against ah God that I can imagine. It is to surrender to sin without raising a fist. It is the act of a ah coward.

'Cop-out is too mild a word. The religion of the Die is a crime, against ah God and against the dignity and grandeur of man created in ah God's image. Free will distinguishes man from ur God's other creatures. To surrender that gift may well be that sin against the Holy Spirit which is unforgivable. Dr. Rhinehart may be well educated, he may well be a medical doctor, but his so-called er religion of the Die is the most unh poisonous, unh obnoxious and satanic thing I have ~~er~~ heard of ah.'

'May I comment on that?' says R.'s voice from ~~off-screen~~ and his image appears, wordless and relaxed, staring ~~on~~, obviously not intending to speak a single further word. ~~It is as if~~ if the channel had been switched every time his face ~~appeared~~ on the screen.

Five, seven, eight, ten seconds pass.

'Dr. Dart,' says a subdued female voice.



'Gentlemen,' interposes Mrs. Wippleton with her best smile.

'Catholicism is not the elevation of man's debilities [comes Father Wolfe's voice and then face] but of his spiritual grandeur. It is the insect minds of psychologists -'

'Gentlemen -'

'Your defensiveness interests me,' says Dr. Dart.

'Our subject today,' interposes a beaming Mrs. Wippleton, 'is the religion of the Die and I for one am anxious to hear what Dr. Rhinehart has to say about the charge that his religion is schizophrenic and pathological.'

[The image of Dr. Rhinehart appears, glowing, friendly, relaxed. Five seconds. Six.]

'I don't understand your silence, Dr. Rhinehart,' says Mrs. Wippleton from off-screen. Not a flicker of change in R.

'This is a typical symptom, Mrs. Wippleton,' says Dr. Dart's voice, 'of the schizophrenic in the catatonic state. Dr. Rhinehart is apparently capable of going in and out of such states almost at will, a most unusual ability. In a few minutes he may be talking so much you won't be able to shut him up.'

Dr. Rhinehart removes the pipe from his mouth and exhales a lungful of fresh air.

'But if I understand you correctly, Dr. Dart,' says Mrs. W., 'then you are saying that Dr. Rhinehart has a form of mental disease which would normally be institutionalized.'

'No, not quite,' says an intense Dr. Dart. 'You see Dr. Rhinehart is a sort of schizophrenic *manqué*, if I may coin a phrase. His religion has permitted him to do what most schizophrenics are incapable of doing: it justifies and unifies his splintered personality. Without his religion of the Die he would be a hopelessly babbling maniac. With it he can function - function as an integrated, schizophrenic *manqué* of course, but function nevertheless.'

'I find his silence this afternoon senseless, rude and a cop-out,' says Rabbi Fishman.

'He is afraid to confront the unh American people with the enormity of his ur sin,' says Father Wolfe. 'He cannot answer Truth.'

'Dr. Rhinehart, would you like to answer these charges?' asks Mrs. Wippleton.

[The image of R. slowly removing his pipe, still looking at the viewer.]

'Yes,' he says.

Silence of five seconds, ten. Fifteen.





perhaps we should discuss why the religion of the Die attracts some people.”

‘Oh yes.’

‘May I give my answer now?’

‘Oh yes do. Go ahead.’

Father Wolfe’s prosecuting-attorney voice snaps out from the same screen from which looks Dr. Rhinehart.

‘The devil has always attracted men through gaudy disguises ah, through bread and circuses ahh and through promises he cannot fulfil unh. I believe —’

‘Wouldn’t it be interesting if he never came out of it?’ interrupts Rabbi Fishman’s voice.

‘I beg your pardon, I was speaking.’ [Father Wolfe.]

‘Oh he’ll come out of it,’ says Dr. Dart. ‘The permanent cata-tonic looks more tense but less alert. Rhinehart’s obviously just putting on an act.’

‘How can people be interested in such a nut?’ asked Rabbi Fishman.

‘I believe he’s not always this way, is he?’ asks Mrs. Wippleton.

Father Wolfe says:

‘He talked to me quite pleasantly before we went on the air, but I wasn’t fooled. I knew it was just ah un trick.’

‘Dr. Dart, perhaps you’d like to comment on why the religion of the Die attracts followers,’ says Mrs. W.

‘Look, he’s exhaling again,’ says Rabbi Fishman.

‘Ignore him,’ says Dr. Dart, ‘we’re playing his game.’

Father Wolfe says:

‘Mrs. Wippleton, I must point out that you asked *me* to answer that question first and that I was rudely interrupted by Dr. Dart before I had finished.’

[Silence. The image changes to Mrs. Wippleton, who is sitting wide-eyed and openmouthed looking to her right.]

‘Oh my God,’ she says.

‘Jesus H. Christ,’ comes one of the panelists’ voices off-screen.

[A loud crash and two or three feminine screams from the audience.]

‘What the hell is this?’

‘STOP THEM!’

[Bang.]

Mrs. Wippleton, still openmouthed, is seen standing up and fiddling with the microphone at her neck. She tries a smile:



'What the hell's the matter with you guys in there?' shouts someone.

[The image shifts to a shot of Rabbi Fishman's feet, which are wrapped around each other, and then to Arturo X, who is standing tensely with his back to the camera looking off at the control room.]

'You're on,' comes a muffled shout.

Arturo turns to face the camera.

'Black brothers and white bastards of the world -'

A gray-flanneled arm and white hand appear around his neck; the face of Dr. Dart is seen tensely beside and behind that of Arturo.

'Drop your gun, you, or I'll shoot this man,' Dr. Dart says toward his right.

'Inside the control room there, you!' shouts Dr. Dart. 'You! Throw down your gun and come out with your hands up.'

Arturo's face begins to show less strain, and the viewer becomes aware of Dr. Dart's face taking on a strangled look. A long black-suited arm and huge white hand are seen now firmly around his neck, and the face of Dr. Rhinehart, still with the pipe in his mouth and still with the benign look on his face, appears beside that of Dr. Dart. Arturo breaks away from Dart and the viewer sees a gun in Dr. Rhinehart's other hand sticking into the side of Dr. Dart.

'What do you want me to shoot now?' an off-screen voice says.

'Shoot me,' says Arturo's voice.

[The image pans slowly from the sedate wrestler's pose of the two psychologists past the terrified and bewildered faces of Mrs. Wippleton and Rabbi Fishman, past the empty chair of Father Wolfe, to Arturo, still gasping for breath, but looking intently and sincerely into the camera.]

'Black bastards and white brothers of the world...' begins Arturo. A pained, quizzical expression crosses his face. He says: 'Black brothers and white bastards of the world, we have taken over this television program this afternoon to bring you some truths they won't tell you on any program except at gunpoint. The black man -'

[A tremendous explosion from the rear of the studio interrupts Arturo. Screams. A single 'bang.']

'Fire!!'



some, blue eyes glittering with tears, dressed in blue jeans and a black shirt open at the neck.

He looked into the camera with steady and serene hatred for about five seconds and then said quietly with only one partial choking spasm:

'I'll be back. Perhaps not next Sunday, but I'll be back. There's a rottenness to the way men are forced to live their lives that poisons us all; there's a worldwide war on between those who build and work with the machine that twists and tortures us and those who seek to destroy it. There is a worldwide war on: whose side are you on?'

He evaporates from the screen, leaving only a smoke-smudged image of Dr. Rhinehart, crying. He arises now and moves three paces closer to the camera. His head is cut off so that all the viewer sees is the black sweater and suit. His voice is heard, after a brief burst of coughing, quiet and firm:

'This program has been brought to you by normal, earnest human beings, without whose efforts it would not have been.'

And the black body disappears, leaving on the screen only the image of an empty chair and a small table with a cup of undrunk liquid and beside the cup a blurred white speck, like the compressed feather of an angel.



We know from tapes made on recording devices hidden by agents of the IRS, FBI, SS and AAPP in the apartment of H. J. Wipple, the fuzzy-minded, delirious, senile, and senile have helped Rhinehart's various financial schemes and exactly what transpired the afternoon and evening of the Great TV Raid. Much of it is not relevant to Rhinehart's desperate efforts to escape the law, but a summary is valuable as an indication of the sick structures and values being developed by him and his followers.

Wipple's living room contains a glassed-over wooden Roman couch, an oriental desk with a French porcelain clock, two Danish-modern chairs, an upholstered day-sleeper with a large boulder, and a ten-foot area of white sand on one side of the early American fireplace. The living room is thus furnished in styles ranging from early Neolithic to what H. J. has joshingly called Fire Island eternal. It is recorded that Wipple claims that everything was chosen by the Dia. It seems probable.

A cube of Trustees meeting of the DICE LIFE Foundation had been scheduled there for after Rhinehart's appearance on the television program. Such meetings occur in such random places and at such random times that few have ever been recorded. Present that afternoon were Wipple, an essentially conservative man whose keen capitalist mind has somehow been poisoned by the atmosphere of dicepeople; Mr. Edgar Rhinehart, who had recently passed the New York State Bar Examination despite allegedly casting a die to choose answers to several of the multiple-choice questions; Dr. Jacob Epstein, the deeply compromised associate of many of Rhinehart's ventures, who is reportedly acting in an increasingly eccentric and irresponsible manner (he is up for a Special Contamination from the AAPP); Linda Reichman, Rhinehart's sporadic mistress and incorrigible whore; and Joseph Fineman and his wife, Faye, both active dice theorists. Attendance varies at these meetings, since apparently trustees determine whether they will attend by consulting their dice.

These six people had all gathered at Wipple's by 5 P.M. that afternoon - an hour after the conclusion of 'Religion for Our Time' - but only Mrs. Rhinehart appeared to have watched





and Ecstein indicated a lack of interest in what IRS did, Wipple noted that he deducted three hundred thousand dollars a year from his income, which partly accounted for his generous contributions to the foundation. He added that according to the latest treasurer's report, prepared by a reliable diceaccountant whom the dice had permitted to be accurate, the foundation's failure to charge reasonable fees for presence at the Dice Centers, for group therapy, for their children's dice games and for their various publications was meaning a net loss of over one hundred thousand dollars a month (Ecstein commented 'Right-on!').

*[We begin our verbatim report at this point (HJWbehbourlivrm: 4.17.71.7.22-7.39.)]*

['The voice of Wipple] Sooner or later we've simply got to start getting some more income. Don't you people realize that other businesses throughout the country are cashing in for incredible amounts on Diceboy and Dicegirl T-shirts, green-dice sport shirts, cufflinks, necklaces, tie clips, bracelets, bikinis, earrings, diaper pins, love beads, candy bars? That dice manufacturers have quadrupled their sales in the last year?'

'Sure,' said Jake Ecstein. 'I bought a hundred shares of Hot Toys Co., Inc. at 2½ about a year ago and just sold out yesterday at 68½.'

'But what about us?' Wipple exclaimed. 'Other dicelife games, selling for four times what we charge for ours and, you tell me, totally missing the whole point of diceliving, are making millions, while we sell ours for less than cost. And bars and discotheques with a five-dollar cover charge, are advertising dice-dice girls who strip at random, while our Dice Centers' Sodom and Gommorah are practically free. Everyone's making money out of the dice except us!'

'That's the way the cubes cool,' said Ecstein.

'We keep giving the Die options to make us some profit and it keeps turning us down,' said Mrs. Rhinehart.

'But I can't keep covering these losses.'

'No one's asking you to.'

'But the Die keeps telling me to!'

*[The sound of Ecstein and Mrs. Rhinehart laughing.]*

'So far we're the only religion in world history that's losing money hand-over-fist,' said Ecstein. 'I don't know why, but it makes me feel good.'

'Look, H.J.,' said Mrs. Rhinehart. 'Money, power. Diceboy T-shirts, green-dice love beads, the Church of the Die - every-



It had been an interesting program, with significant talk, action and audience participation: a thoughtful dramatization of some of the key issues of our time. The sponsor would be pleased.

Such were not my thoughts as I choked and gasped and staggered out the door opposite the control room, through which I'd seen Eric pull the body of Arturo. In the hallway I tried breathing again for the first time in fifteen minutes, but my eyes, nose and throat still felt as if they were supporting carefully tended bonfires. Eric was crouched over Arturo, but when I knelt beside him to examine the wound, I saw that Arturo was dead.

'To the roof,' Eric said quietly, standing. His dark eyes were streaming tears and seemed not to see me. I hesitated, glanced at a die and saw I couldn't follow him but was to seek my own way. We could hear sirens wailing outside in the street.

'I'm going down,' I said.

He was trembling and seemed to be trying to focus his eyes on me.

'Well, go ahead and play your games,' he said. 'Too bad you don't care about winning.' He shivered again. 'If you want to find me, call Peter Thomas, Brooklyn Heights.'

'All right,' I said.

'No good-bye kiss?' he asked, and turned away to trot down the hall toward a fire exit.

As he began opening the window at the end of the hall, I knelt beside Arturo to check a last time for a pulse. The door opened beside me and a policeman with twisted face hopped grotesquely into the hallway and fired three shots down the hall; Eric disappeared out the window and up the fire escape.

'Thou shalt not kill' I shouted, rising stiffly. Another policeman came through the door, the two of them stared at me and the first one edged cautiously down the hall after Eric.

'Who are you?' the man beside me asked.

'I am Father Forms of the Holy Roaming Catholic Church.' I pulled out my canceled AAPP card and flashed it briefly at him.

'Where's your collar?' he asked.

'In my pocket,' I answered, and with dignity removed the



Lil held herself against me for about fifteen seconds, snow falling from my head and getting tangled in her blonde hair. I was exhausted. Arms about each other, we turned and staggered down the hall toward the living room.

'Are you all right?' she asked.

'Probably,' I answered. 'But I sometimes get the impression the world is disintegrating even faster than I am.'

As we entered, H. J. arose from a chair and came over to pump my hand.

'Incredible show, Luke,' he said, blowing cigar smoke against my chest and placing a chubby hand reassuringly on my shoulder. 'Don't see how you do it sometimes.'

'I didn't plan any of it,' I said. 'Didn't know it was going to happen. When Eric asked me for tickets to the program, I thought he and his friends had become my fans. Hypocrites!'

'Not too good for our image, though. Did you consider that?'

'Mmmm.'

'Was anyone killed?' Lil asked from beside me.

I moved over to the couch and with a groan collapsed beside Jake, who, dressed in white T-shirt and black Bermuda shorts, smiled warmly at me. His feet were bare and his hair looked as if it had last been cut two months ago, by Edgarina.

'Yes,' I answered. 'Can I have something to drink?'

'Sure,' Lil said. 'What would you like?'

'Hot chocolate.'

'You're beautiful, Luke baby,' Jake said, smiling benevolently. Lil headed for the kitchen.

'Thanks.'

'It's the white collar. You on a religious kick again?'

'It's a disguise. People trust priests.'

'I'm a little high,' Jake said, still smiling blissfully.

'Or at least they trust priests a little more than they do dice-people.'

'But not so high that it interferes with my brilliance,' Jake added.

'You're melting on my couch,' H. J. said, staring down at me.

'Oh, I'm sorry,' I said.



A young man in his thirties, handsome and earnest, was sitting in front also.

'I'm sorry to disturb you,' he said.

'That's all right,' I said. 'I just came down to the basement for a breath of fresh air.'

'I'm John Holcome of the Federal Bureau of Investigation,' he said. He reached into his suit-jacket pocket and leaned toward me to show a little card that looked like my membership card in the AAPP. I squinted aggressively at it.

'What took you so long?' I asked.

He replaced his card in his jacket pocket, leaned back against his seat and looked into my eyes earnestly.

'After learning through certain means that you were at Wipple's, we had to decide what to do with you.'

'Ahhh,' I said.

'And traffic in Manhattan is clogged in several places tonight.' He smiled slightly at me like a bright student reciting a lesson. 'You're Dr. Lucius Rhinehart,' he finished.

'That's true, I often am,' I replied. 'What can I do for you?' I sprawled back against my headrest and tried to appear relaxed. My forearm sounded the horn.

Mr. Holcome's pale blue eyes searched my unearnest face earnestly and he said:

'As you may know, Dr. Rhinehart, in the course of your television performance this afternoon you broke several state and federal laws.'

'I was afraid I might have.' I looked vaguely out the window to my left for the Lone Ranger or Dicewoman to come rescue me.

'Assault and battery on Dr. Dart,' he said. 'Brandishing a firearm in a public place. Larceny of Dr. Dart's gun. Resisting arrest. Aiding and abetting known criminals. Conspiracy to overthrow the government of the United States. Illegal impersonation of a cleric in a public place. Illegal use of a sponsor's time to give a personal message over public media. And infringement of twenty-three other FCC rulings regarding decorous and proper behavior on a television-media performance. In addition, we are aiding Inspector Putt in amassing evidence for a possible future prosecution of you on a charge of murder in the first degree of Franklin Osterflood.'

'What about hitchhiking within the city limits?'

'Conservatively speaking – and we had no time to check this without computers – we believe that these various crimes





You can tell us whether you want three years or thirty minutes to run. Otherwise it's four walls till doomsday.'

'I see.'

'Now if you'd like, sir, you can go back to Mr. Wipple's apartment and meditate there.' He opened the door on his side and got out. The garage attendant materialized suddenly outside my door and looked in at me earnestly.

'Yes. Yes, it would be messy driving tonight,' I said and lifted my heavy burden out of the car. 'I suppose we may be seeing each other again?'

'In thirty-eight minutes. Yes.' Mr. Holcome smiled, and his earnest eyes beamed into mine their unremitting sincerity. 'Good evening, Dr. Rhinehart.'

'That's your theory,' I mumbled and walked with little enthusiasm back the way I had come.

I climbed up the ten flights of stairs with considerable less stealth and self-esteem than I had come down them. It was getting to be a *long* day.

Lil was the one who came to the door to let me in.

'What happened?' she asked as we moved down the hall toward the living room.

'Red light,' I said.

'What are you going to do?'

I collapsed in total exhaustion on the couch. Jake was seated in the sand in a half-lotus position, staring into the red glow of a fake fire in Wipple's early American fireplace and smoking lazily on a homemade cigarette. H. J. wasn't around.

'They've got mad Lucifer really running,' I said. 'Do you think, Lil, the Die intended you to remain married to a man whom it may ask to spend the next two hundred and thirty-seven years in prison?'

'Probably,' she said. 'What happened?'

I began telling Lil and Jake about my conversation in the basement and all the options I suddenly found myself confronted with. They listened attentively, Lil leaning against the boulder, Jake staring into the fire.

'If I betray Eric, it will seem,' I concluded wearily, 'I don't know, as if I had betrayed someone.'

'Don't worry about it,' said Jake. 'We never know what's good for us. Betrayal might be just what Eric's looking for.'

'On the other hand, two hundred and thirty-seven years in prison seems like an unduly long time.'

'The sage can fulfil himself anyplace.'



## EPILOGUE

One day when Luke was being chased by two FBI men with .45s he came to a cliff and leapt off, just catching the roof to a wild vine twenty yards below the ridge and dangling there. Looking down, he saw fifty feet below six policemen with machineguns, mace, tear gas canisters and two armored cars. Just above him he saw two mice, one white and one black, beginning to gnaw away at the vine to which he clung. Suddenly he saw just in front of him a cluster of luscious ripe strawberries.

'Ah,' he said. 'A new option.'

— from *The Book of the Die*